

Scientology in Duitsland ligt in de vuurlinie

BONN - De organisatie van Duitse kamers van koophandel (DIHT) spreekt van een 'tikkende tijdbom' en 'een gevaar voor Duitsland als vestigingsplaats voor het bedrijfsleven'. De ministersconferentie van de zestien deelstaten stelde onlangs in een verklaring dat het instituut 'economische criminaliteit en psychologische terreur in zich verenigt'. Minister Norbert Blüm van sociale zaken spreekt van 'een misdadige organisatie die onder de dekmantel van een religie geld witwast en zijn verblindende ideologie wereldwijd probeert te verbreiden'. "Daarbij schrikt zij voor niets terug," aldus Blüm.

De Scientology-sekte, die twee jaar geleden nog trots meldde dat zij acht miljoen aanhangers heeft en met meer dan duizend missies en groepen in 79 landen is vertegenwoordigd, ligt in de Bondsrepubliek zwaar onder vuur. Aanleiding zijn twee rechterlijke uitspraken. Daarin wordt gesteld dat Scientology geen kerk is maar een concern, dat geen ander doel nastreeft dan het maken van winst.

Voorts verloor de van oorsprong Amerikaanse organisatie in Kassel een proces tegen een voormalige werknemer, die vond dat hij voor de honderd uur die hij per week voor Scientology werkte, niet meer dan een slavenloon had gekregen. De rechter vond dat ook en stelde dat het Duitse arbeidsrecht met zijn minimumloon en sociale premies ook voor de organisatie geldt. Kortom: Scientology geldt in Duitsland als een op winst gerichte onderneming en niet, zoals bijvoorbeeld in Nederland, als religieuze beweging met alle voordelen van dien, waaronder belastingvrijdom.

Die laatste uitspraak betekent volgens advocaat Ralf-Bernd Abel, die het proces in Kassel namens de voormalige werknemer voerde, dat ziekenfondsen en belastingdiensten zullen onderzoeken hoeveel ze nog van Scientology te goed hebben. In Frankrijk, waar een soortgelijke uitspraak door de rechter werd gedaan, kreeg de organisatie een navordering van de belastingdienst van ruim honderd miljoen francs, ruim dertig miljoen gulden. Naar verluidt is Scientology voor ongeveer eenderde van zijn miljardenomzet afhankelijk van Duitsland en Zwitserland.

Behalve door rechterlijke uitspraken staat de Scientology-sekte in Duitsland ook onder druk door de samenwerking tussen een toenemend aantal tegenstanders. Zo hebben zich in Hamburg en Berlijn groepen gevormd van huurders, advocaten en makelaars, die hun aandacht richten op de malafide praktijken van de sekte. Dat was hoognodig, aangezien door Scientology gestuurde makelaars in Hamburg en Berlijn de helft van de huizenmarkt beheersen, zo meldt het weekblad *Der Spiegel* op gezag van anonieme bronnen.

De uit de sekte uitgetreden Renate Hartwig laakt vooral de 'persoonlijkheidstest' waarmee Scientology zieltjes wint. Daarin moeten tweehonderd vragen worden beantwoord, waarvan bijna altijd de uitkomst is dat de persoon in kwestie zwakten en gebreken in zijn persoonlijkheidsstructuur heeft. Onmiddellijk volgt dan het aanbod dat Scientology met cursussen genezing kan bieden.

"Het begint met een communicatiecursus à raison van 380 mark. Dan volgen onder meer een cursus 'levensreparatie', die ruim 4200 mark kost en een 'reïningsprogramma'. Binnen een maand is de cursist bijna 27.000 mark lichter," zegt Hartwig.

Dat cursisten zo lang doorgaan, komt volgens haar doordat iedere cursus een open einde heeft en betrokkenen het gevoel hebben dat bij de volgende cursus een doorbraak bereikt kan worden. "Zo wordt het net langzaam maar zeker dicht getrokken," zegt Ursula Caberta, die zich namens het bestuur van de stadsstaat Hamburg met Scientology bezighoudt.

Scientology heeft vooral ook het oog op het bedrijfsleven gericht, langs welke weg de organisatie politieke macht wil veroveren. De 35-jarige David Miscavige, die na de dood van oprichter Ron Hubbard in 1986 de leiding van de organisatie overnam, verfijnde de strategie ter onder-

mijning van het bedrijfsleven. Dat doet hij via de overkoepelende organisatie *World Institute of Scientology Enterprises* (WISE), die licenties verschafft aan bedrijven om in ruil voor een deel van de winst van de leer van Scientology gebruik te maken. Van grote invloed zijn de personeels- en managementadviesbureaus, die in relatie met WISE staan.

Als voorbeeld van zo'n licentienemer noemt Hartwig het adviesbureau *Choice International*, dat in meerdere landen vertegenwoordigd is en zich vooral richt op middelgrote ondernemingen. In het contract wordt vastgelegd dat het bureau voor 10.000 mark per persoon op zoek gaat naar personeel, dat de persoonlijkheidstest moet doen en na een periode van *Auditing* - waarvan het bedrijf doorgaans niets weet - op de sleutelpositie wordt gezet. Iets soortgelijks doet het bureau *U-Man* voor grote concerns in Duitsland.

Om aan te geven hoe succesvol die strategie wel is, verwijst Hartwig naar een citaat van Scientology-leider Miscavige, die op een interne bijeenkomst zou hebben gezegd dat 'de verbreding van de leer in de afgelopen jaren ongelooflijk is geweest'. Alleen al in 1989 zouden 75.000 ondernemingen in de wereld, waaronder grote concerns als Shell, Volkswagen, Toyota en General Motors, gebruik hebben gemaakt van op Scientology gebaseerde managementtraining.

Hoe riskant de infiltratie van Scientology in bedrijven wel kan zijn, bewijst het voorbeeld van Herbold Beteiligungs GmbH. Deze in het plaatsje Meckensheim gevestigde holding moest vorige maand voor drie dochterbedrijven, die machines voor kunststof-recycling produceren, het faillissement aanvragen. Oorzaak waren schulden van meer dan 40 miljoen mark.

In de *Süddeutsche Zeitung* vertelt een werknemer, die zichzelf voorstelt als Frank Rossberg, hoe het bedrijf ten onder is gegaan. Het begon aan het einde van de

jaren tachtig, toen contact werd gelegd met bedrijfsadviseur Wolfgang Ziebell, lid van de mantelorganisatie WISE. De leiding van Herbold was van zijn kwaliteiten onder de indruk en benoemde hem tot directielid, met personeelsbeleid als verantwoordelijkheid. Na korte tijd legde Ziebell het personeel winstvermeerdering op als het doel dat alle middelen heiligt.

Opstandige medewerkers werden tot *Auditing* verplicht, zegt Rossberg, die er aan toevoegt dat dit gepaard ging met toenemende controle en disciplinaire maatregelen. "Iedere flexibiliteit en creativiteit werd uitgebannen," stelt Rossberg, volgens wie het bedrijf de genadeklap kreeg doordat een deel van de omzet aan WISE overgemaakt moest worden.

Volgens Tom Voltz, een uitgetreden topmanager van WISE en auteur van het zojuist verschenen boek *(k)lein Ende* moeten geïnfiltreerde ondernemingen zestien procent van hun omzet aan de organisatie afdragen.

Ursula Caberta is het met de Duitse kamers van koophandel (DIHT) eens dat Scientology een gevaar is voor 'Duitsland als vestigingsplaats voor het bedrijfsleven'. Ondernemers en bankiers komen ook steeds meer tot dat inzicht. Zij eisen schriftelijke verklaringen dat zakenpartners niet tot de organisatie WISE behoren. Is dat wel het geval, dan is dat een ontbindende voorwaarde. Steeds meer banken doen bij kredietverlening hetzelfde.

Hoe succesvol de strijd van vrouwen als Ursula Caberta en Renate Hartweg tegen de Scientology-sekte wel is, blijkt uit het feit dat de sekteleiding in Amerika twee vertrouwelingen naar het Duitse hoofdkantoor heeft gestuurd. Het zijn Kurt Wieland, leider van de geheime dienst *Office of Special Affairs* en Marc Yager, hoofd van de overkoepelende organisatie WISE. Na het puinruimen, heeft de Amerikaan Mark Lizer in Hamburg de leiding overgenomen.

Maar hoewel het inzicht in Duitsland toeneemt dat Scientology een totalitair geleide profitorganisatie is, durft niet iedereen rechtstreeks de strijd met haar aan te binden. Dat geldt bijvoorbeeld voor het Duitse technologieconcern Siemens, dat zeer terughoudend is zijn medewerkers over de gevaren van Scientology te informeren. Siemens-woordvoerder Andreas Panten: "Onze positie in de Verenigde Staten dwingt ons voorzichtig te zijn. De sekte is daar veel sterker dan hier."

SPD-lidmaatschap onverenigbaar met Scientology Church

De/D 27/5

BONN (AP) – Na de FDP heeft nu ook het partijbestuur van de SPD bepaald dat het lidmaatschap van de partij niet langer verenigbaar is met het lidmaatschap van de Scientology Church.

Het partijbestuur motiveert het besluit met de argumenten dat Scientology een totalitaire leer verbreidt, psychologische terreur aanwendt en bedenkelijke wetenschappelijke en politieke doelen nastreeft. Ook versluiert de organisatie haar ware doelstellingen en misbruikt ze de naam 'kerk', omdat in wezen sprake is van een organisatie die uit is op financieel gewin, aldus het bestuur.

De Scientology Church zegt zelf te streven naar „spirituele bevrijding van het individu door middel van herkenning van de Waarheid”. Ook andere politieke partijen in Duitsland beschouwen de beweging ervan democratische beginselen te ondermijnen. De FDP besloot al in april Scientology-leden te weren en te royeren. In maart oordeelde het Bundesarbeitsgericht dat Scientology geen kerk maar een onderneming is.

Subject: German MP sues scientology

Date: Mon, 23 Oct 1995 18:39:13 GMT

From: tilman@berlin.snafu.de (Tilman Hausherr)

Organization: Xenu's Ranch

Newsgroups: alt.religion.scientology, soc.culture.german

Renate Rennebach, german member of Parliament (opposition party SPD), has filed a lawsuit against scientology today. Target of the lawsuit is to forbid scientology to repeat the allegation that she is a "human rights abuser".

Rennebach is spokesperson of the "cults workgroup" in the SPD fraction in Parliament, and considers herself to be libelled in the german edition of "Freedom" and in the full page ads in the WP and the NYT in the US.

Tilman

[Another thought: isn't it ironic that scientology has paid the Washington Post for ads, and that this money is now used to fight their stupid lawsuit ?]

--- Tilman Hausherr [KoX; awards: DB, SP decl. by Koos]
biz: <tilman@sietec.de> <[URL:http://www.sietec.de/](http://www.sietec.de/)> (company page)
home: <tilman@berlin.snafu.de> <[URL:http://www.snafu.de/~tilman/](http://www.snafu.de/~tilman/)>

Milne: Was Fishman a member of HASI from 14.3.1979 till 7.10.1984 ?

F.A.C.T.Net, Inc.
(Fight Against Coercive Tactics Network, Incorporated)
a non-profit computer bulletin board and electronic library
601 16th St. #C-217 Golden, Colorado 80401 USA
BBS 303 530-1942
FAX 303 530-2950
Office 303 473-0111

This document is part of an electronic lending library and
preservational electronic archive. F.A.C.T.Net does not sell
documents, it only lends them according to the terms of your
library cardholder agreement with F.A.C.T.Net, Inc.

=====

-
1. CURRENT FILE NAME: APP2A.TXT
 2. ADMINISTRATIVE CODE:OK
 3. SECURITY CODE:GP
 4. DISTRIBUTION CODE:PDMCF
 5. DESCRIPTIVE NAME FOR BBS: Scientology's History of Criminality.
This appendix was submitted in sum and substance to the California
Court of Appeals, the California Supreme Court and the U.S. Supreme
Court as an appendix to existing briefs in the Wollersheim case.
Their purpose was to inform the court as to the actual history,
nature, activities, and goals of Scientology as opposed to what
Scientology's propaganda machine would like the court to believe.
Must Reading for someone interested in Scientology's financial
history.
 6. SORT TO: ONE COPY TO IN SCIENTOLOGY LEGAL\WOLLERSHEIM, ONE
COPY TO GENERAL
 7. CONTRIBUTOR: IMHO-LAWRENCE WOLLERSHEIM
 8. LOC. OF ORIG. OR IMAGE FILE: LAWRENCE WOLLERSHEIM & F.A.C.T.
 9. NOTES:
 10. FINAL PROOFING DONE ON (DATE):
 11. FINAL PROOFING DONE BY:
 12. FINAL INDEXING DONE ON (DATE):
 13. FINAL INDEXING DONE BY:

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00001

APPENDIX 2

SCIENTOLOGY'S HISTORY OF CRIMINALITY 1

In 1979, nine of Scientology's top executives pleaded guilty to extensive burglaries, forgeries, "infiltration," "obstruction of justice," and other crimes carried out against over 100 Federal agencies including the Dept. of Justice, The Dept. of Defense and the I.R.S.

In U.S. v Heldt et. al. 3 the facts showed that church personnel had secreted and destroyed (~ documentary evidence of crime, (688 F.2d at 1243 n.8), had committed illegal break-ins and theft, (id. at 1244,1247, 1248), had electronically bugged government offices, (ibid), had lied to federal investigators and a grand jury, (id. at 1246,1247,1248,1249 , 1253), had suborned perjury, (id. at 1247,1253), had forcibly restrained, kidnaped, handcuffed and gagged a potential adverse witness, (id. at 1244,1273), and had formulated "conspiracies to obstruct justice, steal government property, burglarize, bug, harbor fugitives from justice, and commit and suborn perjury before the grand jury," (id. at n. 27 at 1258)~4

In a memorandum urging stiff sentences for the Scientologists federal prosecutors wrote:

" The crime committed by these defendants is of a breath and scope previously unheard of. No bureau, office, desk, or file was safe from their snooping and prying. No individual or organization was free from

----- 1 These materials also have been derived in substantial part from evidence submitted in the court briefs and appendices filed in Wollersheim v. Scientology in the California court system, Civ. No. B023193, (LASC No.C332827,) and at the U.S. Supreme Court, U.S. 89-1361, U.S. 89-1367.

2 See United States v. L. Ron Hubbard et al.,Crim. No. 78-401, D.C.D.C.(1979).

3.688 F.2d 1238 (D.C. Cir.1980) cert. den.456 U.S. 926 (1982).

~.For more examples of Scientology's continuous pattern of similar criminal behavior see, Vannier v. Superior Court of Los Angeles 32 Ca.3d 163 (1982), Church of Scientology of Cal. v. Cazares, [former mayor of Clearwater, Florida] 635 F.2d 1272 (4th Cir. 1981), Founding Church of Scientology v. Webster, [former Director of F.B.I.], 802 F.2d 1348 (D.C. Cir. 1986), Florida Bar v. Vannier 498 So.2d 896 (1986), Allard v. Church of Scientology of California 58 Cal. App. 3d (1976).

their despicable conspiratorial minds. The tools of their trade were miniature transmitters, lock picks, secret codes, forged credentials and any other device they found

necessary to carry out their conspiratorial schemes."

SCIENTOLOGY'S INTERNATIONAL CRIMINAL HISTORY

In England, the "Inquiry into the practice and effects of Scientology" prepared for the House of Commons in 1971 (The Foster Report), produced a ban on Scientology that lasted several years.

In 1977 Denmark, known for its tolerance, Scientology lost its protection contained in the criminal code of justice concerning the protection of religion. '

In 1982 the full Supreme Court of Victoria Australia ruled that Scientology was not a religion or religious institution but a sham. The court ruled Scientology was ~ body formed for an object that was illegal under criminal laws. '

In the mid 1980's France convicted L. Ron Hubbard in absentia for fraud. In 1988, in Milan Italy, 76 Scientologists were committed for trial charged with offenses from fraud, medical m-practice and criminal conspiracy to extort money, to unlawful detention.

In a massive raid in 1990, Spain arrested 71 of the top international leaders of Scientology on charges ranging from fraud to tax offenses . The charges alleged i nvo lvement in fo rge ry of public documents, coercion, labor law violations, and illicit association.

On July 6, 1990, France arrested 6 of the top officials of Scientology in France for the illegal practice of medicine and fraud.

If one was observing only a one time or single occurrence of " renegade " criminal activity of one or more adherents, Scientology's criminal history could be less relevant. Here, though, these activities were a part of the secret written policies of the group.

As the FBI and IRS has repeatedly uncovered, Scientology's actions and policies were created, approved, and ordered by the highest levels of the organization. These are the day to day activities of Scientology, not "renegade" actions in spite of Scientology's never ending spewing of subsequent "damage control" cover stories.

"This is a criminal organization day in and day out. It makes Jim and T ammy , (Baker) , l ook like k i nde rgarten . " So says Vivki Aznerand one of th~ six top executives in Scientology until her defection in 1987. '

-----I.From the Scientology case tried before the Copenhagen court in 1974 later upheld by the Eastern Circuit Court of Appeals in 1977.

2."Board of Inquiry into Scientology" presented to both houses of parliament, Victoria, Australia. See Church of the New Faith v. Commissioner of Payroll Tax, (decided May 5, 1982). Also see the Anderson Report of 1965, Victoria, Australia.

3. Time magazine May 6, 1991.

17

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00003

Scientology has been labeled by trial judges "schizophrenic and paranoid"¹ and "corrupt, sinister, and dangerous." These descriptions were both accurate, but dangerously incomplete regarding Scientology's actual core nature.

Scientology has two separate parts and personalities. It has an inner and secret Scientology of substance, and an outer public Scientology of front and form.²

Scientology's schizophrenic organizational personality is consistent with the historic models of the inner and outer circle structure common to past political secret societies. From this inner secret SUBSTANCE, outer public FORM perspective Scientology's seemingly many incongruities finally become congruent.

The outer public Scientology can appear as a benign and intertwined mix of pop psychology, psychiatry, eastern philosophy, and a thick mantle of traditional-sounding but strained religious terminology and trappings.' The inner secret Scientology can be better understood by studying the many parallels of cosmology, policies, and practices of earlier political secret societies, societies like the Thule Gellerschaft Virl, Ninja and Thugee clans, and the

1. Judge Breckenridge in Church of Scientology v. Armstrong, No. C 420153 Cal. Super. CT. (1984).

2. Some past secret societies can be thought of as the forerunners of modern intelligence agencies. They are also notorious for setting up and disbanding front groups. The outer names or forms may appear to change but the inner substance, goals, and activities stay the same. Some front groups involved in either recruiting new members or covertly attacking adversaries for Scientology are: the Committee To Defend The First Amendment, the Hubbard Dianetics Foundation, the Citizens Commission On Human Rights, Narconon, the Committee On Public Health And Safety, the Task Force On Mental Retardation, the Gerus Society, the Dianetic Information Group, the Committee To Reinvolvement Ex-offenders, the National Commission for Law Enforcement And Social Justice, the Foundation For The Communication of Culture International, Doctors For Religious Liberty, Vanguard, April, (a pseudo anti cult organization), Alliance To Protect Religious Liberty, Committee For A Safe Environment, American Citizens For Honesty in Government, the Way to Happiness Foundation, the Whistle Blowers, HealthMed, Criminon, Applied Scholastics, Concerned Businessman's Association of America, and Sterling Management.

3. This inditing strain can be seen, in part, by reviewing Scientology's original publications with newer edited editions

and tracing how key definitions have been reworked to accommodate "the look and feel" of religious subject matter or where L. Ron Hubbard's controversial secular or political materials have been edited out.

18

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00004

Hashish Assassins.1

The goals of these earlier political secret societies were primarily concerned with getting or maintaining political power and wealth. The world view of these secret societies often involved a special elitism.

Several of these classes of secret societies had UFO or extraterrestrial cosmologies and world views confirming and bestowing upon them their "world historic destinies." Their secret society was the "only one" chosen to play critical, often hidden roles in current and future world events. These mystical cosmologies imbued members with a sense of "privileged" and exclusive secret knowledge. Like its political secret society ancestors, the inner Scientology also has its own mystical cosmology.

"This universe is a rough universe. Its a deadly serious universe. Only the strong survive. Only the ruthless can own it. (From The History of Man by L Ron Hubbard, p.38.)

The inner circles of these political secret societies traditionally controlled the outer circles with outright lies, blackmail, deliberate misdirection, or more subtle deception. These deceptions were often achieved by withholding information of a privileged or secret initiatory nature until the individual had passed the appropriate loyalty or security tests.

Psychological coercion and physical terrorism were also day-today policies. The inner circle, where necessary, would use or sacrifice ignorant outer circle members or other lower level inner circle members as tools or deployable agents.

"When you move off a point of power, pay all your obligations on the nail, empower your friends completely and move off with your pockets full of artillery, potential blackmail on every erstwhile rival, unlimited funds in your private account and the addresses of experienced assassins and go live in Bulgaria and bribe the police....

So to live at all in the shadow or employ of a power you must yourself gather and USE enough power to hold your own-without just nattering to the power to "kill Pete", in straight forward or more suppressive veiled

-----1.The Thule and Virl were two pre W.W.II German secret Societies. Many of the top Nazis who later created the political party and "religion" of National Socialism were important members. The Hashish Assassins played a secret key role in the political power balance of the Middle East for almost 600 years. Their organization is the origin for

our word assassin. The Thuggee cult from which our modern word thug is derived was a secret society that challenged British political power in India.

2. An excellent and well documented reference book for the secret society model which also references Scientology is "The Occult and the Third Reich, by Dusty Skylar.

19

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00005

ways to him as these wreck the power that supports yours. He doesn't have to know all the bad news and if he's a power really he won't ask all the time, "What are all those dead bodies doing at the door?" And if you are clever, you never let it be thought HE killed them-that weakens you and also hurts the power source. "Well, boss, about all those dead bodies, nobody at all will suppose you did it. She over there, those pink legs sticking out, didn't like me." "Well," he'll say if he really is a power, "why are you bothering me with it if its done and you did it. Where's my blue ink?" Or, "Skipper three shore patrolmen will be along soon with your cook, Dober, and they'll want to tell you he beat up Simson." "Who's Simson?" He's a clerk in the office enemy downtown." "Good, when they've done it, take Dober down to the dispensary for any treatment he needs. Oh yes. Raise his pay."....

"... we all aren't on the stage with our names in lights, always push power in the direction of anyone on whose power you depend. It may be more money for the power, or more ease, or a snarling defense of the power to a critic, or even the dull thud of one of his enemies in the dark, or the glorious blaze of the whole enemy camp as a birthday surprise...."

Real powers are developed by tight conspiracies of this kind pushing someone up in whose leadership they have faith.1

Scientology's religious7 cloaking specifically helps give legal immunity to its dangerous' "Coercive persuasion"3 practices called

1. Above 2 quotes from the policy "The Responsibilities of Leaders" by L. Ron Hubbard. This policy in many ways again echoes and reinforces the "fair game" policy and attitude.

2. Reports of induced neurosis, psychosis, attempted suicide and alleged suicide related to auditing are frequent and common knowledge at high levels in the Scientology organization but they are suppressed. For more information on Scientology's use of coercive persuasion techniques see the included "Coercive Persuasion and Scientology" appendix.

Coercive persuasion or thought reform is a coordinated technology of gradually applied, coercive influence and behavioral control. Coercive persuasion acts to gradually

overcome the will without convincing the judgment. The victims are "unduly" influenced and lose their ability to make independent decisions or exercise an informed consent. Their defenses, cognition, values, attitudes, conduct, and ability to reason have been technologically undermined. For a more detailed technical definition of coercive

20

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00006

auditing. Auditing acts as an effective manufacturing and initiation system for the gradual step by step conversion of the new and naive outer circle members. It converts them first into unquestioning inner circle members and then into deployable agents or operatives.

Steve Fishman, who is now serving 5 years in jail for SEC violations, is an excellent example of the level of control such organizations try to exercise. In the May 6, 1991 issue of Time magazine, Fishman claims to have been a long time Scientology intelligence operative. He claims that to protect Scientology he was ordered to commit suicide by high level Scientology executives. He was told to take "a short term loss" to prevent church embarrassment and involvement in the disclosure of his Scientology directed SEC criminal activities.

(See following Fishman affidavit which has been included solely to highlight the similarities mentioned in this section. It is a little tedious in the beginning but clarifies itself starting around page 4.)

AFFADAVIT OF STEVEN FISHMAN

I, STEVEN FISHMAN, am a former member of the Church of Scientology. I was on staff as the Fields Financial Planner of Fort Lauderdale, and later the Fields Financial Planner of Miami, between 1979-1988. I left the Church after a successful exit counseling attempt in August of 1990.

I am currently serving a five year sentence for mail fraud in connection with my position at the Church of Scientology. I am currently incarcerated at the Federal Correctional Institution of Tallahassee, Florida.

I became acquainted with the civil lawsuit of Larry Wollersheim during the fall of 1985. Herein are the circumstances within which I became familiar with the case:

During the summer and fall of 1985, I was being audited on my New Era Dianetics Grade V processing at the Mission of Fort Lauderdale and the Miami Organization of the Church of Scientology. Auditing is a form of spiritual counseling offered by the Church. My auditors were Nancy Witkowski in Fort Lauderdale and Leah Abady in Miami.

In New Era Dianetics, the preclear, or person getting audited, is directed to view mental image pictures of pain and unconsciousness which the preclear or parishioner has been led to believe existed in his "past track" or successive episodes

of past life experiences. The preclear is led to believe this through various mind control techniques, utilizing various forms of trance induction and hypnotic suggestion, namely the TRs or Training Routines,

-----...Continued...

persuasion and an explanation of its tactics, see appendix of same title in this document. Also see the Reply to Brief in Opposition in Wollersheim v. Church of Scientology U.S. 89-1361 cert. den. (19B9), appendix C, and Respondent's Supplemental Brief of November 16, 1990 in U.S. 89-1361, the optional "Coercive Persuasion and Scientology" appendix, section 3.

21

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00007

and in the latter case, through either "reverie", "anaten" or "boil-off", which are Scientology-defined phrases for specific conditions of hypnosis. This is done with the aid of an electropsy- chometer, or E-meter.

During-my specific experience with this New Era Dianetics (or NED) auditing, I was led to believe while under mind control that I had been the biological father of Jesus Christ, who was represented to me to be a very evil being, an enslaver of mankind who was given to violent rages and temper tantrums, and who was also a homosexual and molester of chi Idren. For five years (1985-1990) I believed that I had "pulled the evil Christ into my own universe" by having been sexually attracted to his mother (Mary) as a young man, and further that she became impregnated by virtue of the fact that each morning I would watch her bathe in a stream and having become aroused by watching her behind reeds (bushes), the semen (ejaculate) penetrated her via the movement of the current of the warm water in the stream.

I was directed toward other (suggested) memories which were indicated by my auditors who measured the truth or falsity of these "events" on the E-meter, including the crucifixion of Christ, where I had believed myself to be present, having been directed to look at mental image pictures in a reduced state of hypnotic awareness of my having hammered his left foot to the cross, and other scenes.

My viewpoint of Christ was that of Hubbard's himself, as evidenced on Saint Hill Special Briefing Course Tape #112, where in Hubbard stated that Christ died for his own sins.

During this period of my auditing, my hatred for Christ reached a point where I felt an enormous level of guilt for having fathered such a "degraded being" as he was called by my auditors Witkowski and Abady.

Further on in my auditing, after having sessions at the Flag Service Organization in Clearwater, Florida which validated or corroborated the results of the auditing in Miami and Fort Lauderdale, I was given further data my Ann Glushakow and Margaret Supak regarding who "Christ really was on the whole

track", or what the previous life cycles or incarnations of Christ were. At that point, at the order of Inspector General for Tech Ray Mithoff, I was given some OT (Operating Thetan) data which was normally not extended to someone who had not attested to the State of Clear. Under the supervision of two Class XII auditors, Richard Reese and John Eastment, and where my folder was personally Case Supervised by Ray Mithoff, I was allowed to see some confidential materials which were photocopies of L. Ron Hubbard's handwriting and pre-served in cellophane sheets. This data related to OT III, or the Wall of Fire, an advanced level in Scientology.

I learned that there had been an Emperor Xenu who had brought us here to earth in an attempt to solve overpopulation on another planet called Marcab, or the Marcab Confederacy. I had asked Richard Reese where this planet was, and he showed me a Technical Bulletin (typed, not handwritten, but marked Confidential), that explained that Marcab was the planet between Mars and Jupiter in our own solar system, which had been destroyed in a war or holocaust which involved the use of the hydrogen bomb, and that this planet was now a fragment of rocks in space known as the "asteroid belt."

22

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00008

Further, I was given data where at the time the Earth was known as "Teegeack", and that we (all thetans or spiritual beings here or the aggregate population of the planet) were transported in clusters (packaged by the thousands together) and transported here in space ships that closely resembled DC-9 airplanes, and thereafter we were dropped in two volcanic areas, one of which was Las Palmas, and the other Hawaii. From there we dispersed and through various means, including going up through the evolutionary or genetic track (of picking up bodies), we populated the planet.

I was finally told that Xenu, who had been the most evil being of all, was toppled in a revolt in which L. Ron Hubbard participated as a "loyal officer" of the people. I was further told by Reese and via the handwritten document I was shown of Hubbard's that Xenu was trapped in an electronic mountaintop, where "he was to this very day."

After a rigorous Security Check on the E-Meter by Hans Stahli, who was the Qualifications Secretary of the Religious Technology Center, I was routed back to Ray Mithoff, and was told by Mithoff that the Emperor Xenu had many subsequent evil life cycles, and one of these was that of Christ. I had raised the question of how this possibly could have been true when the data in Hubbard's own hand indicated that Xenu was trapped in or on an electronic mountaintop, where he remained "to this very day." Mithoff explained that the body remained there, but Xenu, the thetan, had dropped the body and has created havoc as a chaos merchant on the planet ever since. The explanation made perfect sense to me at the time, as I knew from previous training and processing in Scientology that the body is nothing more than a vehicle which the thetan or spirit operates, much like one can drive a car, and then abandon it.

The above preface is relevant to this case, as I will now explain.

Mithoff revealed to me that having failed to take responsibility for "fathering Xenu when he was Christ", I had pulled in much pain and suffering into the physical universe. Further, that Christ was back, but this time, presenting the most dangerous threat to the only hope mankind had, namely, the Church of Scientology. Mithoff explained to me that Xenu / Christ had returned as Larry Wollersheim, and ~ needed to handle him and thus rectify my overt act or high crime that I had caused by virtue of the fact that I had fathered Christ as an illegitimate son in that lifetime.

My hatred for Xenu Christ was now fixated and personalized against Larry Wollersheim. I felt compelled to destroy him, for I believed that he was the reason for all of humani ty 's ills and SOrrow.

I had been very active in the Guardian's Office of Scientology, working under Fred Hare, and in 1981, having destroyed the legal case of an ex-member suing the Church by the name of Lavenda (Van Schaick) Dukoff. After the Guardian's Office was renamed the Office of Special Affairs in 1983, I continued to work as a OSA Missionaire, under various Church officials, including Lyman Spurlock, who had participated in various covert operations, one of which was the recovery of some stolen documents (archival records of L. Ron Hubbard dating back to 1947-1948), which during said recovery, Lavenda's sister Lisa was raped.

It was Lyman Spurlock who gave me specific data on Larry Wol-

23

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00009

lersheim. I was told that he lived in Aspen, Colorado, and that this parents owned a steak grill or coffee shop in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. The Office of Special Affairs, under the direction at that time of Edward Parkin and Lynn Farny, had ordered the Permanent Off Loading of Larry Wollersheim. Permanently Off-Loading someone means killing or murdering them, although we referred to the practice as "an enforced abandonment of the mock-up" and other Scientological euphemisms. It was Lyman Spurlock who told me that the Office of Special Affairs had ordered the Pe rmanent ly OffLoading of Wollersheim, and under the mind control influence I was under at the time, I fully agreed with the order, and further, I wanted to be an active participant in it.

Lyman told me that the Office of Special Affairs needed someone with "great confront", (someone who could confront things more than other people were capable of doing), who could " handle" Wollersheim. The Office of Special Affairs had difficulty in locating Wollersheim at his home in Aspen, but concluded that at certain times of the year, such as on the birthday of his father and/or mother, or at Christmas, it was likely that Larry Wollersheim would be visiting his parents in

Milwaukee. Further, Lyman Spurlock indicated that as soon as he knew from Office of Special Affairs operatives in the Milwaukee area who had the home and coffee shop of his parents under constant surveillance that Larry Wollersheim was visiting his father, Larry Sr., then that would be the best time for Larry Wollersheim to be Permanently Off-Loaded. Lyman wanted me to relocate to the Milwaukee area and apply as a waiter, cashier, or other food service worker in Larry Sr.'s coffee shop, and if that were not possible to frequent the location as a "regular" and gain a foothold into that scene as a plant. Lyman told me that the best way to handle Larry Wollersheim was to "Pixie-Dust him", or have him given doses of cyanide poisoning. Lyman also had a very strong hatred for Larry's mother, whose name was Elinor. I remember her name because it was the same name as one of my supervisors, Ellie Bolger, the Fields Financial Planner International. Lyman wanted Elinor to be Pixie-Dusted as well, which was supposed to serve as a means to localize the incident and deflect any responsibility away from the Office of Special Affairs. There was another family member named Cindy who he disliked, but I do not recall how she was related to Larry. It may have been his sister, although I cannot recall more about her. I expressed an eagerness and a willingness to do the Operation, although ~ never was told what the name of the Operation was.

However, I was not called upon to fly to Milwaukee, and two years later, I had asked my Ethics Officer, Dori Hare (Fred Hare's wife, as Fred Hare later became the Mission Holder of Fort Lauderdale), why ~ was never asked to handle Wollersheim. Dori Hare told me that I could not go anywhere when I was having ethics trouble of my own, plus, she did not want my production (of securities class action lawsuit claims) to be interfered with. I was also a telex/data entry operator for the Flag Banking Office Network External, later incorporated as part of the INCOMM Computer Network of Scientology, and I was one out of three people authorized to send and receive on the INCOMM network in connection with a global tax evasion and money laundering scheme known as Operation Paper Chase, so it was not possible, according to Dori Hare, for me to be

24

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00010

away from the Miami Org and/or Mission of Fort Lauderdale for any extended length of time. I also was having difficulties with the Church because of a PTS situation (Potential Trouble Source) occurring because my own parents had become antagonistic to Scientology as a result of conversations with a psychologist who was a friend of the family named Uwe Geertz, and who later served as an expert witness in my criminal case, along with Dr. Margaret Singer and Dr. Richard Ofshe, notable experts on thought reform and specifically on the Church of Scientology's use of mind control techniques.

I was very offended that despite the fact that Lyman Spurlock had offered me the chance to kill Wollersheim, I was never invited to go to Milwaukee and do it. I argued that I was the most suitable for the job as I had been the father of Wollersheim when he was Christ. I further reminded Dori Hare

ring funds to accounts maintained by the Church under the name of Theta Management at the Bank Leu in Lausanne, Switzerland; Bank Leumi in Tel-Aviv, Israel; the Ziraat Bank of Ankara, Turkey; the Indosuez Bank and the Banque du Commerce et Credite Internacionale both of Luxembourg, and the Foreign Commerce Bank of Vienna, Austria. I did the journals and reported the stats to the Flag Banking Officer International, David Gaiman, while the actual journals and transfers of funds were done electronically by wire at Flag. Leona Grimm signed off on all of my entries on the INCOMM computer. She had mentioned on two occasions that there was an urgency to get the records completed because of "mocked-up" (false) reports required to be sent in to the Appeals Court in the Wollersheim Case. Our entries on INCOMM were forwarded to Carol Martiano at the Office of Special Affairs in Los Angeles, and then she in turn forwarded the completed and authorized documents to Larry Heller, who was the Church attorney arguing the case in California on our behalf.

The above Affidavit is true and correct to the best of my knowledge.

STEVEN FISHMAN STATE OF FLORIDA COUNTY OF LEON

Before me personally appeared STEVEN FISHMAN, known to me to be the person described in and who executed the aforementioned affidavit, and signed the document in my presence~

Witness my hand and official seal this 17th of June, 1991, at Tallahassee, Florida.

Cynthia G. Rona NOTARY PUBLIC, STATE OF FLORIDA

My Commission Expires: December 12, 1994

Another important element to these previous political secret societies is the use of the ancestral processes of modern coercive persuasion as well as hypnosis and trance producing secret initiatory rites and exercises. These elements help isolate and desensitize the individual, build blind obedience, and develop a ruthless and fanatical will to execute the secret society's goals.

"When someone enrolls consider he or she has joined up for the duration of the universe. Never permit an "open minded" approach. . . . If they 're enrolled, they 're aboard, and if they're aboard they're here on the same terms as the rest of us. Win or die in the attempt.... We're not playing some minor game in Scientology....The whole agonized future of this planet, every Man, Woman, and Child on it, and your own destiny for the next endless trillions of years depends on what you do here and now with and in Scientology.

This is a deadly serious activity. And if we miss getting out of the trap now, we may never again have another chance.

endless trillions of years of the past. Don't muff it now because it seems unpleasant or unsocial to do Seven, Eight, Nine, and Ten."1 Do them and we'll win "

Without the various hypnotic and trance inducing initiatory levels intertwined into Scientology's cosmological cloak, Scientology's substantive and actual secret activities and motivations would become visible, long before the covert application of their coercive persuasion programs have had the opportunity to undermine the judgment, clarity~ and reasoning of their lower level or "outer circle" new members.

"Psychiatrists say these sessions can produce a drug like mind controlled euphoria that keeps the customers coming back for more.

Scientology's secret inner cosmology also cloaks the ignoble intentions of Scientology's founder, L. Ron Hubbard, to possess wealth, power and make other people his political and economic "slaves." 4 The secret inner cosmology cloaks the actual mental state, qualities, and motivations of L. Ron Hubbard. Hubbard at various times has been described as megalomaniacal and a pathological liar.S

"We are not in the business of being good boys and girls. We're in the business of going free and getting the org production roaring. Nothing else is of any

-----1.r"7. Hammering out of existence incorrect technology, 8. knocking out incorrect applications, 9. closing the door on any possibility of incorrect technology, 10. closing the door on incorrect applications."] From Hubbard Communication Office Policy Letter "Keeping Scientology Working," the most repeatedly studied policy in Scientology. Besides new member indoctrination, points seven through ten find broad application and interpretation in Scientology's intelligence actions toward perceived mental health competitors or other adversaries.

2. For complete details regarding Scientology's auditing\coercive persuasion process see the "Coercive Persuasion and Scientology," appendix materials in Respondent's Supplemental Brief of November 16, 1991, U.S. 89-1361, Appendix 3.

3. Time magazine May 6, 1991.

4. From Time magazine May 6, 1991. "All men are your slaves," is a quotation from L Ron Hubbard's personal affirmations as disclosed in the Armstrong v. Scientology case.

5. See Church of Scientology of California v. Armstrong No. C.420153 Cal. Super. CT. (1984). Scientology settled out of court with Armstrong for approximately \$800,000.00 and then initiated sealing the court records.

interest then to Ethics but (a) getting tech in...and (b) getting production up and the org rolling along...In short a staff member can get away with murder so long as his statistic is up and can't sneeze without a chop if its down...Ethics must use all org discipline only in view of the production statistic of the staff member involved." (HCO policy letter of September 1, 1965 Issue VII.)

"The purpose of ethics is to remove counter intentions from the environment . " (HCO pol i cy letter of June 18, 1968.)

In Scientology the creation of a fanatical "will to triumph" is reminiscent of another ruthless inner circle. In spite of overwhelming factual evidence, the top leaders of the Nazis continued to refuse to believe the war was lost. Isolated mentally and physically, they even continued to issue battle plans and orders to nonexistent armies.

The allies literally had to fight the Nazi leaders to the near last Berlin bunker, but not before 50 million people first had to die. History has painfully taught us the result of secret conspiratorial fanaticism.

Coercive political secret societies cut off their members from any opposing facts or opinions. They subvert rational and logical thought. Unfortunately, when a society becomes dominated or strongly influenced by such extreme groups or ideologies, only the most extreme deterrents historically have had any correctional or deterrent effect.~

THE CRIMINAL GOALS OF SCIENTOLOGY

Scientology is, at its inner essence, an intelligence agency 2 and a political secret society.

"In my opinion the church has one of the most effective intelligence operations in the U.S. rivaling even that of the F.B.I." From Ted Gunderson a former head of the F.B.I's Los Angeles office.

-----1.This is not to suggest that the inner Scientology and the former Nazi party are identical or somehow linked. There are although many similarities in policies, tactics, and esoteric goals, more than enough to validate model parallels and comparison.

2.Scientology operates an intelligence division formerly called the G.O., now called the OSA. It is smaller in scope and similar in operation to the C.T.A., K.G.B., or Mossad. In the training manuals for Scientology's intelligence operations seized by the F.B.I., L. Ron Hubbard states that Scientology has the best intelligence service in existence today. For more detailed information on Scientology's intelligence agency, see "A Piece of Blue Sky" by John Atack, part 5, "The Guardian's Office." Also see the documents seized by the FBI concerning the G.O., its training manuals, and its covert operations manuals.

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00015

For the liability shielding benefits of religious protection Scientology uses a veneer of extraterrestrial cosmology consisting in part of alien space wars and the creation of a new superman, the Homo Novis, the Clear, and the Operating Thetan, (OT).'

For the privileged inner initiates there is even a cleverly created secret adaptation of traditional and science fictionesque neo-satanism. 3 Scientology's cloaking cosmology helps to secure both undeserved first amendment religious immunities for its experimentation with thought reform and is part of an absolutely essential internal cover story to the newer outer circle members. It covers the organization's motivations behind its criminal and antisocial actions and policies, and its actual anti-religious, political power, wealth, and control goals.

"The vital targets on which we must invest most of our time are: (T1) Depopularizing the enemy to the point of obliteration. (T2) Taking over the control or allegiance of the heads or proprietors of all news media. (T3) Taking over the control or allegiance of key political figures. (T4) Taking over the control or allegiance of those who monitor international finance and shifting them to a loss precarious standard"....

"Intelligence is not concentrating on what they should be - the WFMH, [World Federation of Mental Health] the NAMH [National Association of Mental Health] These are the groups I want destroyed." From the Hubbard Communications Office Policy Letter of 14 Jan. 1969, " Thus in the case of Scientology Orgs [organizations] one should attack with the end view of taking over the whole field of mental health."

"Our war has been forced to become, to take over absolutely the field of mental healing on the planet in all forms." "Our only justification in doing these things is that Scientology is the only game where everybody wins...."

In a way not altogether unlike the Nazi bullies who over-

----- 1. Time magazine May 6, 1991.

2. The preceding three Scientology terms refer to previously "unattainable" new evolutionary states in mankind, which only can be attained through Scientology.

3. See the "Another Secret Scientology Section or the Respondent's Supplemental Brief of November 16, 1990 U.S. 89-1361 appendix 2, "The Secret Scientology," for restricted or sealed details on Scientology's secret cosmology.

4. The preceding quotation from "Targets", "Guardian Order 060971," and other documents seized by the F.B.I. on its authorized search of Scientology's headquarters.

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00016

whelmed the German judicial system, Scientology's fanatical tactics threaten the critical balance necessary to protect our justice process.

The chapters will put more hard documentation behind these harsh statements.

31

=====
If this is a copyrighted work, you are acknowledging by receipt of this document from FACTNet that on the basis of reasonable investigation, you have not been to obtain a copy elsewhere at a fair price, and that you are and will abide by the following copyright warning.

WARNING CONCERNING COPYRIGHT RESTRICTIONS: The copyright law of the United States (Title 17, United States Code) governs the making of photo copies or other reproductions of copyrighted material. Under certain conditions specified by law, libraries and archives are authorized to furnish a photocopy or other reproduction. One of these specified conditions is that the photocopy or reproduction is not to be "used for any purpose other than private study, scholarship, or research." If a user makes a request for, or later uses, a photocopy or reproduction for purposes in excess of "fair use," that user may be liable for copyright infringement.

FACTNet reserves the right to refuse to accept an order for copying or other duplication, or delivery of copied or duplicated material if in its judgment, fulfillment of the order would involve violation of copyright law.

CARD CATALOG ENTRY

L ; FILENAME OF TEXT FILE: E:\PCB\SCN\FILES\GENERAL\APP2A.TXT

DOS FILENAME OF IMAGE FILES:

ADMINISTRATIVE CODE:

SECURITY CODE:

DISTRIBUTION CODE:

NAME FOR BBS:

SORT TO:

CONTRIBUTOR:

LOC. OF ORIG:

NOTES:

For additional verification see image files contained in the file with same name and .ZIP extension.

UPDATED ON:

UPDATED BY:

=====

F.A.C.T.Net, Inc.
(Fight Against Coercive Tactics Network, Incorporated)
a non-profit computer bulletin board and electronic library
601 16th St. #C-217 Golden, Colorado 80401 USA
BBS 303 530-1942
FAX 303 530-2950
Office 303 473-0111

This document is part of an electronic lending library and preservational electronic archive. F.A.C.T.Net does not sell documents, it only lends them according to the terms of your library cardholder agreement with F.A.C.T.Net, Inc.

REPORT ON SCIENTOLOGY

The "Church" of Scientology is a multinational enterprise with centers in every major city in North America and in every major western country. Their assets are valued in the hundreds of millions, if not billions, of dollars.

The actual activities of this organization are cloaked in secrecy. Few people who have not been directly involved in this organization really know what Scientology is all about. This is because the members of the Organization are carefully trained to keep the activities of Scientology concealed from the "outside world" which they have been taught to perceive as hostile to them as Scientologists.

The actual activity of Scientology is the business of delivering unlicensed psychotherapy for the purpose of making money. One of the governing policies of Scientology is to "make money, make money, make more money, make other people produce so as to make money." (Exhibit 1)

Scientologists, in recruiting new members into the organization, are trained to "find the ruin" of the new member, the "ruin" being that one thing in the person's life that he/she most wants to "handle" or change. Specifically, the one thing in the person's life that he/she would pay any amount of money to change. This "ruin" can be anything from a marital problem to a financial problem to an illness such as cancer. The new recruit is then promised that Scientology has the answer to that problem. The recruit is then sold an introductory course in Scientology called the Communications Course. This course consists of a series of "training routines" or drills, tape recorded messages from the founder of Scientology, L. Ron Hubbard, and written propaganda. It is on this course that the new recruit is subjected, without his knowledge, to hypnotic and mind control techniques that will begin to mold him into an unthinking and unquestioning Scientologist.

Externally, Scientology may be organized differently in different countries. In Israel, Scientology has been registered as a secular association, while in the United States Scientology has been registered as a church. Hubbard made no secret of the fact that he registered his organization in America as a church to take advantage of the protection guaranteed by the U.S. Constitution to religious organizations.

is exactly the same in, for example, the United States and in Israel. Scientology in the U.S. and in Israel will use identical checksheets for its courses; the policies used to run the organizations will be identical; the internal structures of the organizations will be exactly the same. In fact, in many cases, staff members from the U.S. will be sent to Israel to train the staff in that country. Internally, the organizations will be identical. Therefore, a country such as Israel can infer that the known activities of the "church" in the U.S., including criminal activities, can be expected to occur in Israel.

Scientology had its beginning in 1950 with the publication by its founder, L. Ron Hubbard, of the book Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Health. Through this book, Hubbard promised a cure for various psychosomatic ailments through "dianeric auditing," a self-help therapy based on the idea of recalling and thus destimulating painful memories from one's past. During this "auditing," the person is hooked up to an electrogalvanometer, a simple lie detector, which is supposed to help the person being "audited" locate these painful memories.

In its early years Dianetics was faced by legal problems related to statutes governing the healing professions. Hubbard also faced open opposition from the medical and mental health establishments. To escape these problems, in 1954 Hubbard legally transformed Dianetics into the religious enterprise

known as Scientology. With the protection of this religious status, Scientology was free to expand with little opposition. Currently, Scientology does face challenges from time to time by the U.S. Internal Revenue Service, which seeks to have Scientology reclassified as a business, but these efforts have not yet been successful. Part of the problem is that there is no legal precedent in the U.S. for the disestablishment of a "religion." It is a matter that is currently before the U.S. Supreme Court in the case of Wollersheim Vs. the Church of Scientology (Exhibit 2). It will probably take several years for this case to be decided.

Scientology claims to have 6 million members worldwide. Since the membership records are kept secret by the organization, this figure is difficult to verify. More realistic estimates place U.S. membership at 40,000 and worldwide membership at 100,000.

The remainder of this report will be subdivided into three parts:

Part 1: A closer look into Scientology - the organization and the beliefs of its adherents.

Part 2: The criminal policies and activities of Scientology.

Part 3: The final report from the Clealwater hearings on Scientology.

Part 1: A closer look into Scientology

Much of the belief system in Scientology centers around a "fear-hope" mechanism that is co-on to many thought reform systems. In Scientology, the new recruit is first e-x-posed to a great deal of propaganda in the form of written "bulletins" or "policy letters" in the introductory courses. The essence of this propaganda is that here on earth we are in a dire situation for which there is little hope. We are faced with almost certain destruction from the atomic bomb. We live in a world in which dangers of all sorts lark every-where - poverty, insanity, war, etc. The new Scientologist is made to see every aspect of his/her life in a new perspective.

Through a constant flood of new information the new Scientologist comes to believe that the government is under the control of a secret group of "suppressive" and evil men somewhere on the planet. That all government agencies have as their goal the destruction of Scientology, which is the Only hope for man. That universities are also controlled by these invisible and "suppressive" influences. That all people outside of Scientology (who come to be known by the derogatory term "wog") are unenlightened and therefore a threat to the only hope that mankind has for survival, i.e.: Scientology. That all one's former friends and even one's family are to be distrusted and feared as potential threats to one's survival. Again and again in the Scientology propaganda the new Scientologist is told that unless Scientology succeeds in mission, mankind faces certain doom.

Examples of this propaganda taken from Scientology policies, are as follows:

"Don't try to persuade. Penetrate. Don't try to overwhelm. Penetrate... We are the first group on earth that knew what they were talking about. All right, so it is. The world's ours. Own it." From The World is Ours, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"A civilization without insanity, without criminals and without war, where the able can prosper and honest beings can have rights and where Man is free to rise to greater heights, are the aims of Scientology... After endless millennia of ignorance about himself, his mind and the Universe, a breakthrough has been made for Man... The combined truth of fifty thousand years of thinking men, distilled and amplified by new discoveries about Man, have made for this success... Scientology is the most vital movement on Earth today... the sun never sets on Scientology. Our aims are simple, if great. And we will succeed and are succeeding at each new revolution of the Earth." From The Aims Of Scientology, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"A post in a Scientology Organization isn't a job. It's a trust and a crusade. We're free men and women - probably the last free men and women on earth. If we don't do a good job now we may never get another chance." From Your Post, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"Auditors have since the first session of Scientology been the only individuals on this planet in this universe capable of freeing Man." From Auditors, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"We are the Free People. Groom from out of the mud and jungle rot of fear, our unchained minds can reach afar and grasp the idea of ultimate Freedom... Scientology - The Road Sign Out. We are the Free People. We LIVE! We're Free!" From We Are The Free People, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"Today can be ours. Tomorrow can come. Let us be ready for it. We are the prime movers in this, the new age. Forget the old. Face up to what will come. And let the dead yesterdays bury the philosophy of authority and Capital Gains and Communist psychology cults. We're no longer tied. The eons march on. Space Opera has again come to a planet on which we live. Always before it meant destruction. Perhaps, this time, due to our efforts, a humanitarian world can exist. We, the Prophets of the Morrow, know the way." From Scientology: The Philosophy of a New Age, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"My purpose is to bring a barbarism out of the mud it thinks conceived it and to form here on Earth a civilization based on human understanding, not

violence. That's a big purpose. A broad field. A star-high goal. But I think it's your purpose, too." From *How We Work On the Third Dynamic*, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"Let us face the reality of this thing. The world confronts several crises.

Man's inhumanity to ~LRn is cjainin~ momentum daily. The time to bring a chaos under control is before it is well begun. We're slightly late as it is. Brutally, there is no other organization on Earth that can slow these down. Factually, there is no other know-how on Earth that can plumb the problems of Man. So if we don't ~nt all of us to be sitting amongst the charred embers, we had better get busy." From *The Eighteenth A.C.C.*, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"In fifty thousand years of history on this planet alone, Man never evolve a workable system. It is doubtful if, in foreseeable history, he will ever evolve another. Man is caught in a huge and complex labyrinth. To get out of it requires that he follow the closely taped path of Scientology. Scientology will take him out of the labyrinth. But Only if he follows the exact markings in the t~qnels. It has taken me a third of a century in this lifetime to tape this route out... Scientologl~, exactly and correctly followed, takes the person up and out of the mess... Scientology is the only workable system Man hrs. It has already taken people toward higher IQ, better lives and all that. N. other system has. So realize that it has no competitor... Scientology is a workable system. It has the route taped. The search is done. Now the route only needs to be ~ralked. So put the feet of students on that route. Don't let them off of it no matter how fascinating the side roads seem to them. And move them on up and out... Don't let your party down. By whatever means, keep them on the route. And they'll be free. If you don't, they won't." From *Safe~uarding Technology*, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"We are the only people and the only organization on Earbb which have the tecl~nology and the ambition bo attempt a clarification of situations which in other hands are considered entirely out of control, to wit, the atomic bomb and the decay and confusion of central governments." From *Purpose*, by L. Ron Hubbard.

"We're not playing some minor game in Scientology. It isn't cute or something to do for lack of something better.

The whole agonized future of this planet, every Man, WOmAn and child on it a~d your own destiny for the next endless trillions Of years depends on what you do here and how with and in Scientology.

This is a deadly serious activity, and if we miss getting out of the trap new, we may never again have another chance."

From *Kee~ing Scientole~y Working*, by L. Ron Hubbard. (Exhibit 3)

'6-

Every Scientologist is fanatically devoted to the idea that his/her ultimate survival depends upon spreading Scientology to the ends of the Earth, know~ as "clearing the planet" (getting everyone on earth to the Scientology level of "Clear"). A Scientologist believes that his/her survival for trillions of years into the future depends on the success of Scientolo~y. The survival of Scientology supersedes any "wo~" (or civilian) law. That is why a Scientologist, using the Scientology phrase "the greatest good for the greatest number of dynamics" (a variant of the old philosophy of the ends

justifying the means), will willingly participate in and justify any and all criminal acts, including murder, if such acts will contribute toward the protection and survival of Scientology.

Scientologists are trained to believe in reincarnation, with a few new twists. A Scientologist is taught that he is in reality a soul, or "thetan," encased in a body, and that he has "owned" a succession of different bodies in the past. In Dianetic "auditing," a Scientologist will "remember" his many past lives, for thousands and millions of years into the past. These past lives become an important part of the person's self concept, and serve as the starting point in the process of a progressive distortion of reality that will become exploited on the secret "upper levels" of Scientology. The Scientologist believes that upon death the soul, or "thetan" (himself) is returned to an "implant station" in space, where he is electronically processed to forget the life he has just lived, and where he is processed to begin a new life. When the "thetan" is sent back to Earth to "pick up a new body" and begin a new life.

Scientologists believe that thousands of years ago, the organization now known as Scientology came here to Earth to attempt to help mankind, and "clear the planet," but that for some reason, it failed. So now they have come back. Thus the motto of the Sea Organization, the central organization in Scientology, is: "We Come Back." Members of the Sea Organization, upon joining, sign a billion-year contract, because the belief is that once this planet is "cleared," they will then go on to "clear" other planets. (~bdqibit 4)

It is important to understand that all Scientology beliefs are acquired when the person is in a reduced state of awareness brought about by hypnotic drills. When a person loses the ability to cognitively evaluate the ideas to

-7--

which he/she is exposed, and this loss of cognitive function increases with the time spent in Scientology.

It is also important to understand the strength with which these beliefs are held by a Scientologist, and the strength of the mind control influencing members of this organization. The despair of parents, who find themselves helpless in countering these beliefs in their children, is a testimony to the success of the "brainwashing" that has been subtly, but successfully, carried out on Scientologists. It is the testimony of many ex-members of this organization that a Scientologist has the potential for both murder or suicide, even enough external pressure. One member who was interviewed admitted to having participated in the plans to murder two defectors from the organization, although there is no evidence that either of these murders were carried out.

Another belief among Scientologists is in the absolute infallibility of founder, L. Ron Hubbard. Hubbard does occupy messiah status among Scientologists. Hubbard is believed to be the reincarnation of Buddha, which he proclaims in his book, "The History of Asia." Hubbard's words, both tape-recorded and printed, are accepted as gospel by the Scientologist. Any questions or doubts expressed by a member bring severe punishment.

Hubbard's credentials are never questioned within Scientology. In his official biography, Hubbard states that he travelled extensively in Asia as

boy; that he is a nuclear physicist; that he had a distinguished military career; that he healed himself from crippling war injuries and from blindness using the techniques of Dianetics; that he has an advanced university degree. Subsequent research into the background of Hubbard reveals, on the contrary, that his levels as a boy were mostly imaginary; that he received mostly failing grades in college, including an "F" in a course on nuclear physics; that his military career was embarrassing, and that as a result of his military exploits he was institutionalized in a mental hospital and pronounced "unfit for combat"; that his physical ailments included an ulcer and conjunctivitis; and that his advanced degree was purchased from a "diploma mill."

Also interesting in Hubbard's background is his fascination, apparently from an early age, with the satanic writings and practices of Aleister

Crowley. Hubbard belonged to a satanic lodge in California known as the O.T.O. (Ordo Templis Orientalis) where he participated in bizarre satanic rites. According to Hubbard's son L. Ron Hubbard, Jr., his father considered himself to be the successor to Crowley when Crowley died in 1937; he believed that he had taken on "the mantle of the Beast." Hubbard told his son that Scientology actually began on December the 1st, 1937, the day Aleister Crowley died. According to this son Hubbard's purpose in Scientology was to "crack souls," to bring unknown people under his control and to use them as channels for satanic purposes. Interestingly, the secret "upper levels" of Scientology - their contents carefully guarded from the public and the media - are almost exclusively concerned with the invoking and exorcism of demons.

Hubbard believed in the practice of using affirmations, and one of the affirmations that he repeated frequently was as follows:

"All men shall be my slaves!

All women shall succumb to my charms!

All men shall grovel at my feet and not know

The actual activities inside Scientology center around the delivery of "auditing," a very structured pseudo-psychotherapy. A Scientology trained "auditor" will ask a series of structured questions which will then be answered by the "preclear," or person being "audited." These questions at the lower levels will concern different areas of the "preclear's" life. At the upper levels of "auditing" however, these questions will become increasingly bizarre, often involved with mythical events happening thousands or millions of years ago. The "preclear," having swallowed the "bait" at the lower levels, and even possibly having gained some benefit from the lower levels, will proceed to the upper levels - having been promised that on these levels he will regain long lost superhuman abilities. The Scientologist is told that on the upper levels he will become an OT, or "operational thetan," and that he will possess the abilities to "exteriorize," or travel outside his body with full perception, to use telepathy to communicate; to move objects with his will; and ultimately, to control all matter and energy with thought. Many Scientologists spend hundreds of thousands of dollars in pursuit of these elusive goals.

The first course done by a new Scientologist is the Communications Course. As with much of Scientology, what the person thinks is happening on this course is different from what is really happening. He/she is told that on this

course he/she will become better able to "co-]unicate," resulting in improvements in his c-reer, marriage, finances, etc. But ~hat is actually happening on this course is that he is being subjected to hypnotic and control drills that will result in a loss of co-nitive and emotive function.

The first drill on this course, kno~m as TRO (for Training Routing O) consists of two people sitting in chairs facing each other. The drill is supposed to improve eye contact, or "confront." The two people stare into each other's eyes for a period of time, usually two hours. If either person blinks or moves in any ~ay, the two hours are started over. This is a hypnotic drill and results in an alt_=red state of consciousness in the person. After doing this drill, the person will do other drills, or return to read propaganda or listen to tape recordred messages by Hubbard.

In the second drill, TRO "bullbaited," the person again stares into the eyes of his/her partner, only this time the partner ~ill say or do things calculated to make the person doing TRO react in some ~{ay. In hullbaiting, anything is allor{ed. Phe purpose is to find the other person's "buttons," areas of "charge," or things to which that person might react. Areas frequent "bullbaited" are weight, s~ality, appearance, family issues, etc. The result of this drill is that the person's emotions become blunted or t=ned off.

Other TR's, or "training routines" have to do with control. A person is n le to do things which make no sense at all, simply because he/she is cor~anded to do them. These drills accustom the person to external control, and this will be e~loited later by the organization. In one such drill~ the person shouts co~nands at an ashtray at the top of his/her voice, telling the ashtray to rise off the table, then thanking the ashtray for doing so. According to one e_x-member who researched these drills, this drill was once used by the Nazis, who did the drill ~{ith an apple instead of an ashtray.

The next course done by a Scientologist is the Dianetics Course, on ~hich b~/she learns to trace back through the hundreds of past lives on his/her "time track" and to recall them in colorful detail.

The next series of courses are the "grades," numbered 0 through 4, in ~{hi the "preclear" (person not yet "Clear") looks at different aspects of his/her current life.

-10-

The first "confidential levels," called Power, Solo, and Clear are carefully guarded from the uninitiated. Members on these levels study the levels in locked classrooms; they carry the "materials" from these classes in locked briefcases; they are forbidden from discussing these levels with anyone, even their spouses. They believe that these levels contain the hidden secrets of this universe.

the very top levels, Scientologists are told bizarre science fiction stories about events that supposedly happened millions of years ago. They are taught that 95 million years ago, through a complex series of events leading to atomic eY=plosions, many souls or "thetans" bocame "pac]caged" together in "clusters." Through auditing, the Scientologists can cor~unicate with the hundreds of de~mons around them and begin to separate from them, cemvincing these demons to leave and find new bodies. As bizarre as this seems, there are now thousands of Scientologists around the world who are occupied many hours a day with this activity - and paying prices up to \$1000 per hour for the privilege of ridding themselves of their demons. The "OT levels" of Scientology, the secret upper levels, are almost exclusively devoted to this

activity. According to Hubbard, once you have rid yourselves of your demons, then your long dormant superhuman abilities, particularly that of "re-orientation," will begin to appear. (Exhibit 5)

Another activity that occurs in Scientology is one known as "sec checking or security checking. At different points in one's Scientology career, the Scientologist will be asked various questions while connected to the E-meter, or lie detector. The purpose of these security checks is to ferret out any potential defectors, or traitors to the organization. Another purpose, although unstated at the time, is to gather incriminating information about each member that can be used later to blackmail the person should he/she decide to defect from the organization. Although a Scientologist is told that all contents of his auditing files are strictly confidential, this is not true. An internal memo states that all auditing files can be used to look for incriminating information to be used against an individual. (Exhibit 6)

During a standard security check, a member may be asked such questions as:

Have you ever stolen anything?

Have you ever been in prison?

Have you ever embezzled money?

Have you ever been a drug addict?

Have you ever raped anyone?

Do you have a police record?

Have you ever made a practice of sexual perversion?

Have you ever murdered anyone?

Have you ever taken money for giving anyone sexual intercourse?

Have you ever done anything you are afraid the police will find out about?

Have you ever been a member of the Communist Party? Etc. (Exhibit 7)

In Scientology, there is also what is known as a Whole Track Security Check, in which the person will be asked about crimes committed in his/her past lives, as:

Have you ever enslaved a population?

Have you ever committed genocide?

Have you ever sacked a city?

Have you ever annihilated a population?

Have you ever destroyed a culture?

Have you ever practiced terrorism?

Have you ever seduced infants?

Have you ever bred bodies for defaming purposes?

Have you deliberately tortured someone?

Have you ever enslaved another being?

Did you come to Earth for evil purposes?

Have you ever made a planet radioactive?

Have you ever caused a planet to disappear?

Have you ever blinded anyone?

Have you ever applied a hot iron to another person's body?
Have you ever boiled someone's living body in oil?
Have you ever eaten a human body?

Have you ever stretched another's body on a rack?
Have you ever made love to a dead body?

-12-

Have you ever had sexual relations with an animal, or bird?

Do you deserve to be enslaved?
(There are 343 such questions.) (Exhibit 8)

In Scientology, there is also a Security Check for children under the age of twelve. (Exhibit 9)

The central organization in Scientology is known as the "Sea Organization" deriving from the fact that until the middle seventies, Hubbard and his closest followers lived on a group of ships sailing and docking in the Mediterranean. In the seventies, the Sea Organization, or "Sea Org," purchased a complex of buildings in the small town of Clearwater, Florida. "Flag," or the "Flag Land Base" in Clearwater now serves as the international headquarters for Scientology. ("Flag" referring to the flagship in Hubbard's old fleet of ships.)

"Sea Org" members sign a contract for a billion years of service, which is taken very seriously. The Sea Organization is run as a para-military organization. Members wear military-looking uniforms. Rank and insignia are observed. Life in the Sea Org is extremely strict. Living is for the most part communal. Children are raised communally. The hours are long and the pay nominal. Sea Org members work 16-18 hours a day or more, Sundays and holidays included, with usually two and a half hours free on Saturdays for "personal time." Discipline is often severe. Sea Org members address each other in a military fashion.

Activity in a Scientology organization is governed by statistics, or "stars." Each staff member must keep track of his/her productivity by hour, day and week, and graph statistics for whatever activity assigned. These "stars" will be turned in to the Organization Once a week and reviewed by executives. Any member failing to achieve acceptable "stars" for the week will be punished by being sent to "ethics," which is the disciplinary arm of the organization. "Ethics" personnel will assist the offending staff person to a "lower condition," which he/she will then have to "work out of" by performing additional, and often demeaning, labor. In some lower conditions, the person will have to work as many as 72 hours without sleep. In one lower condition, the person has to perform an effective act against an "enemy of Scientology" in order to be readmitted to the group.

'13-

"Ethics" can also assist a person in a lower condition to the dreaded "RPF," or "Rehabilitation Project Force," which is the prison of Scientology.

In the RPF, a person must perform hard labor, often working on the renovations of buildings, or doing the unwanted cleaning chores within Scientology. Some ex-members have reported that in the RPF, they were forced to sleep on the floor, were deprived of sleep, had to wear grey racers around their arms so that other members knew not to speak to them, were not allowed to speak to anyone unless spoken to, and even had to eat food left on plates of other members. It is also interesting that in Scientology, when a person becomes psychotic on the upper levels, as does happen, the person will frequently be sent to the RPF as punishment.

Scientology also has its own execution procedure. This bizarre and controversial procedure, known as R2-45, meaning Routine #2 and the 45 referring to a Colt 45 revolver, was first referred to by Hubbard in a book called The Creation of Human Ability. In one document in Scientology, Hubbard ordered that R2-45 be carried out on a number of defectors from the organization. Although R2-45 may not be taken seriously by many current Scientologists, most Scientologists do know what R2-45 refers to.

Another policy which has been controversial for the Scientologists is the policy called "Fair Game." The Fair Game policy states that any enemy of Scientology, known as a "Suppressive Person," may be "tricked, sued, lied to or destroyed" by any means. Although the policy was later rescinded because of its negative public relations impact, most ex-members feel strongly that the Fair Game policy is still very much in effect.

People who leave Scientology often are the targets for harassment by the organization. If a "defector" is to sue the organization, he/she will be branded as a "Suppressive Person" and subject to the Fair Game techniques. Harassing phone calls, death threats, and harassment of employers have been reported. Most ex-members who do sue are eventually silenced by out-of-court settlements which include "gag orders" restraining the ex-members from discussing any aspect of their involvement with the organization. Many defectors are simply too terrified of the organization to speak out against it.

Part 2: The criminal policies and activities of Scientology

One of the more curious aspects of the "Church" of Scientology is their Office of Special Affairs, or "OSA." OSA is simply a renamed version of Scientology's controversial "Guardian's Office." The Guardian's Office was created by Hubbard in 1966, and was managed for many years by Hubbard's wife, Mary Sue. In 1976, eleven "GO" agents, including Mary Sue, were arrested by the F.B.I. and indicted for having infiltrated various government offices in Washington, DC. Using false credentials, they managed to photocopy over 30,000 pages of government documents relating to Scientology. After this happened, the Guardian's Office was supposedly abolished, although the newly formed OSA

is structurally and functionally similar to the older organization. The Guardian's Office was originally formed "to help Hubbard enforce and issue policy, to safeguard Scientology orgs (organizations), Scientologists, and Scientology and to engage in long-term promotion." But the GO, and now OSA, are primarily engaged in obtaining information on the many "enemies" of Scientology, and in carrying out campaigns aimed at destroying these enemies.

OSA has six bureaus: Legal, Public Relations, Information (usually called Intelligence), Social Coordination, Service (for training of OSA staff members), and Finance.

OSA's Bureau of Information has two sections: Overt and Covert Data

Collection. There is also an Operations section in which the various campaigns against "enemies" are carried out. This bureau was Hubbard's private CIA, keeping dossiers on both friends and enemies of the "Church," and compiling supposedly confidential information on members of the "church" to be used for blackmail purposes should they defect.

In keeping with the secrecy of this organization, most of the internal GO and OSA documents are heavily coded, so as to be inscrutable to outsiders.

The Training Pack used to train OSA "agents" is interesting. In one section, the new agent is asked to define the following words: spy, spying, agent, operative, information, intelligence, espionage, counter espionage, counter intelligence, fascism, socialism, communism, CL- FBI, MI6, MI5- KGB,

and GRU. Some of the policies studied on this course include:

Terror Stalks

Communism and Scientology

The War

Codes and Coding

Intelligence Actions

The Spy and His Masters

The Art of Cover

Front Group

Counter-Espionage

Disinformation

Black Propaganda

Dead Agent

Debugging

Pain, Drugs, Hypnosis

Security and Theft of Materials

On this course the agent-in-training must write an essay entitled: "Who our enemies are and their tactics." (Exhibit 10)

Some of the more interesting "criminal policies" of Scientology are as follows:

1. Re: Red Box - a policy giving instructions on how to quickly get all incriminating information into a specially designated "red box" and carried out of the organization in the case of a government raid. "Red Box data" is defined as: "proof that a Scientologist is involved in criminal activities; anything illegal that implicates Hubbard or his wife; operations against any government group or persons; all operations that contain illegal activities; evidence of incriminating activities; and names and details of confidential financial accounts."
2. Basic and Essential Security of Bi (Bureau 1) Operations Material - a policy giving the order that any incriminating documents re: OSA or GO operations must be capable of being destroyed within 30-60 seconds. The recommended method is by fire.
3. Vetting Hat Write-Up - a policy on how to clean up the internal Intelligence Bureau files of incriminating material. The types of evidence specified which needs to be destroyed includes: "mentions or the ordering of a "B&E" (breaking and entering); evidence of stolen

materials; evidence or orders on "casing" (surveillance); evidence of posing as a government agent; evidence of tapping phone lines or illegal

-16-

taping of phone conversations; mentions of harassment of individuals; evidence of bribery; evidence of entrapment; any wording that could be incriminating, i. e., "let's wipe him out."

Re: Coding/Wording of Messages Re BI Activities - this contains instructions on coding OSA or GO documents so as to "give no indication

activities nor cause any suspicion of criminal activities-" Listed in this document are general categories of data needing coding: "incriminating, undercover activities and the like; violations of our status as a tax exempt, non-profit organization; evidence of lobbying, proposing legislation, supporting candidates; subversive activities; money deals that might provoke government tax offices, i.e.: large transfers of funds out of the country; missions burying or hiding income, setting up false accounts, using mission funds to finance a profit-making loan company; and other confidential financial deals." Also to be coded are: "words or actions that tend to dispute the fact that the Church of Scientology's motives are humanitarian: i.e., harass, eradicate, attack, destroy, annihilate, cave-in, entrapment, stir up the opposition." Also to be coded are: "actions of confidential corporate tax bodies, tax strategy, and names of accounts; admission to unpunished crimes and/or incriminating data; and other things that we do not want connected to the Church of Scientology."

5. Intelligence Specialist Training routine - TR L - this is a policy used to train an agent to lie effectively to the media or to a government agency.
6. Drill - a policy giving several examples of drills to be carried out against enemies.
7. Burglary - a policy giving some basic data on this subject.
8. B&E'S - a policy on breaking and entering.
9. Intelligence Bureau Stat - a policy on a point system assigned to various covert activities.
10. Safe U.S. - an internal directive on placing agents into various government agencies.
11. Re: Intelligence - this policy lists the five ways of collecting data: "infiltration, bribery, buying information, robbery, and blackmail."
12. Walk-ins - a lengthy policy on breaking and entering into buildings, how

-17-

to use a locked xerox machine detailed instructions on how to break into locks, complete with diagrams.

13. De-bugging - complete information on the debugging and de-bugging of telephones, complete with diagrams.

Programme: Intelligence: Internal Security - the policy giving directions on "culling pre-clear folders" to "not incriminating" information to be used later to blackmail the person in case he/she defects from the organization.

15. Re: Security and Theft of Materials - more information and instructions on burglary, including casing', the wearing of gloves during a burglary; the use of a "cover story"; correct selection of tools and equipment; and other helpful information.
16. Security - more helpful hints on burglary.
17. List of Nab'l Agencies Withholding Files - a comprehensive list of U.S. agencies to be infiltrated to obtain their records on Scientology.

This is only a partial list of such internal policies of the Church of Scientology. (Exhibit 11)

An interesting example of an "operation" carried out by the Guardian's Office is "Operation PC Freakout." (Most GO and OSA operations are given unique and descriptive names.) Operation PC Freakout was a plan devised against a woman named Paulette Cooper, who in 1971 had written a book highly critical of Scientology. The objective of "PC Freakout" was to drive this woman insane and get her incarcerated in a mental institution or in prison.

Operation PC Freakout consisted of five separate actions. First, a Scientologist impersonating Cooper would call an Arab consulate in New York City, threatening to bomb the consulate. The Scientologist impersonating Cooper will say she has just come back from Israel, and will use some Jewish swear words.

Then a threatening letter is sent to the Arab consulate supposedly from Cooper, again mentioning Israel, and threatening to bomb the consulate and kill Henry Kissinger.

The third action consists of a Scientologist dressed like Cooper into a laundry and causing a scene, threatening to bomb the Arabs, the President and Kissinger. Another Scientologist who has been watching the staged scene goes to a nearby telephone and calls the FBI to report the bomb threats made by "Cooper."

-18-

In the next action, a Scientologist is to call the Arab consulate and tell them that Cooper is crazy and is making bomb threats against the embassy.

In the final action, Cooper's fingerprints are obtained on a piece of blank white paper. Then a bomb threat is typed on that paper and mailed to Kissinger.

Scientology actually used some of these tactics against Paulette Cooper in the 1970s and was successful in getting her indicted by a grand jury. She was ruined financially and emotionally by the experience. She was cleared only when she finally agreed to take a sodium pentothal test to prove her innocence.

This is just one example of the lengths to which Scientology, and OSA, will go to "destroy" one of their enemies in accordance with the Fair Game policy.

These tactics are still used. (Ead-ibit

Other examples of past GO operations are:

1. Project Tricycle - a detailed plan to take control of the small town of Clearwater, Florida, by getting control of the media and all political figures. This plan has been carried out and has been largely successful.
2. Re: China Shop; Clearwater Sun - a plan to take over control or ownership of the newspaper in Clearwater, a newspaper that had been critical of the Scientology presence in Clearwater. This newspaper is now out of business.
3. Re: Prediction in Clearwater - a document listing the "enemy" agencies in Clearwater to be infiltrated by Scientology, including: the St. Petersburg Times (another newspaper critical of Scientology); the mayor's office; a television station; a radio broadcaster's office, the Florida Attorney General's office; and the Florida State Attorney's office.
4. Operation Speedy Gonzales - a plot to ruin the political career of the mayor of Clearwater, a man openly critical of Scientology, by creating a scandal about his sex life.
5. Project Normandy - a more detailed plan for the infiltration of public and government offices in Clearwater, with sixty-nine separate actions listed.
6. Program: Humanist Humiliation - a plan to destroy a publication that had been critical of Scientology by forging a letter on CIA stationery to discredit the publication.

-19-

7. Program Snow White - a complex set of programs to counter bad publicity in Europe by offensive actions and litigation. This complex project involved operations in Morocco, Spain, France, Portugal, Germany, Holland, Sweden, Denmark, Belgium, Austria, Italy, Greece, Algeria, Tunisia, the U.S., Britain, the United Nations, Interpol, Australia, and various other agencies. (Exhibit 13)

Although many of these "operations" occurred ten or fifteen years ago, it is important to understand that the internal policies on which these operations are based are still in use in the organization. Reports from recent defectors indicate that the tactics of Scientology, and of OSA in particular, have changed little over time. Of particular interest to a smaller country such as Israel should be the activities of Scientology in Clearwater. Many of the tactics used to "neutralize" the community of Clearwater can probably be expected to occur in Israel. in some form or another.

Reports from recent defectors from Scientology indicate that the criminal activities of OSA continue on a scale which has been underestimated. One such plan was recently revealed by an ex-OSA agent. This plan, named "Operation Paper Chase," involves a complicated plot to destabilize various European currencies by illegal insider trading. One of the currencies that the "Church" was involved with was the Israeli shekel. Apparently the plan involved the infiltration of various financial agencies in the U.S. and Europe, including the World Bank. From OSA agents working in the Risk and Analysis sections of, for example, the World Bank in Washington, DC and London, Scientology would

gain information regarding which currencies were about to be denied credit by the World Bank. Scientology would then purchase large amounts of these currencies thereby making a large profit, often in the millions of dollars, when the currency crashed. The "Church" would then launder these profits through a bank in Switzerland and convert the profits to gold, which it has stored in several underground locations. At least twelve currencies, including the Israeli shekel, have been manipulated in this way by Scientology. (Exhibit 14)

Another area in which Scientology has been active is that of questionable

-20-

securities and commodities trading, an area that is now being investigated in this country.

One defector from OSA has also given information recently about another plot in which OSA has made millions of dollars through submitting phony class action claims against Fortune 500 companies in the U.S. which had gone bankrupt. OSA agents would obtain phony brokerages, steal blank "confirmation slips" used to submit these claims; file claims using fictitious names, and collect the checks. One recent defector estimates that he alone funneled over \$1 million into the "Church" through this illegal operation. This man also claims that he was flown at one point to Israel to train an Israeli OSA agent in his operation. The name of the agent that he trained was named "Shlomit," and she was employed at that time at the Tel Aviv "Shalom Center" of Scientology. (Exhibit 5)

The criminal history of Scientology is complex and substantial and will probably never be fully revealed. But all members and recent defectors will readily testify that these activities continue just as much today as ever. By studying the record of these activities committed in the past by Scientology, a government can possibly be able to better anticipate the current and future criminal activities of this Organization in its country.

Part 3: The Clearwater hearings on Scientology

In military strategy, it is by studying history that one can anticipate the future. The same is true regarding Scientology. By studying their actions in the past, a city or a government will know what to expect from this organization operating in their midst.

In 1982, the city of Clearwater, Florida, held a series of hearings on Scientology. During these hearings, a great deal of valuable information about this organization was exposed. Although the city, for bureaucratic reasons, did not follow through on the recommendations proposed by the local staff which prepared the final report from these hearings, study of the transcripts of these hearings will give a government such as Israel much useful

-21-

information which can be used for predictive and preventive purposes. It is also very interesting reading.

Final Report from these hearings is organized into five parts: the introduction, containing the purpose for the hearings; a summary of the evidence presented in the hearings, with indexed references to the hearing transcripts; the proposed findings of fact; proposed resolutions to be adopted

by the city commission; and proposed ordinances to be enacted.

The conclusion reached and presented in this report is as follows:

..... that the Church of Scientology has engaged in a public relations campaign to present itself to the citizens of Clearwater as a legitimate, law-abiding, nonprofit religious organization while actually operating, pursuant to specific Written policies, in disregard and in violation of civil and criminal laws. The actual conduct of the Church of Scientology adopted as written corporate policy, includes the following: (1) burglary; (2) larceny; (3) infiltration; (4) smear campaign; (5) extortion; (6) blackmail; (7) frame-ups; (8) deceptive sales and recruitment policies; (9) deceptive use of legal releases and bonds; (10) suppression of free speech and association; (11) deviation from acceptable standards of medical practice and educational requirements; (12) use of tax-exempt funds for unlawful purposes; (13) overtly fraudulent policies designed to extract large sums of money from unwitting and uninformed individuals; (14) extortionate and/or improper use of highly personal information fraudulently procured from individuals based on false promises of confidentiality; (15) the use of unlawful and covertly harassing means to prevent individuals who have been defrauded from obtaining legal redress; (16) and the use of overtly fraudulent policies such as the "minister's mock-up" and "religious image checksheet" to present a "religious front" to the public while actually engaged in the business of unlicensed psychotherapy for the purpose of making money."

In the pursuant summary of evidence, the following aspects of the church's activities are exposed:

1. Use of a religious and charitable guise to avoid payment of taxes;
2. Violation of a federal court order requiring a warning notice to be attached to the E-meter;
3. The church's goal of control and ownership of the city of Clearwater and the infiltration of government offices and agencies and private enterprises;

-22-

4. The church's acquisition of properties with the goal of ownership and control of the community;
5. The church's misrepresentations of its founder, the nature of the auditing process and the character of the organization;
6. The church's misrepresentation of auditing as a "scientific process" promising specific benefits to individuals who then pay large sums of money to acquire these benefits;
7. The church's insect-infested and over-crowded housing facilities which constitute a threat to the health of the community;
8. Civil rights violations of members who are forced into periods of confinement, interrogation, and the performance of degrading acts;
9. The church's pattern of criminal acts, against citizens of Clearwater, the U.S. and foreign countries, designed to blackmail, extort, and destroy individuals who are perceived to be critical to Scientology;
10. Threats to members of legally unenforceable "debts";

11. The lack of formal education for Scientology children;
12. The lack of safe and sanitary child care facilities for Scientology children;
13. The lack of sufficient medical care and the failure of the church to prevent the spread of communicable diseases;
The existence of church policies/commissioning homicide;
15. The destruction of family life by Scientology through their "disconnect" policy;
16. The church's subjecting of individuals to mental and psychological damages through the implementation of dangerous techniques;
17. The existence of a worldwide operation controlled by the parent corporation in Clearwater;
The church's recurrent and pervasive use of blackmail, intimidation, infiltration, espionage and other anti-social acts through the implementation of Scientology's "Fair Game" policy;
19. The church's wrongful and malicious use of personal and confidential information, confided by members during auditing sessions, for the purpose of blackmail, manipulation and control.

-23-

The findings in this report include the following:

1. That there is a compelling need to protect the citizens of Clearwater from deceptive and coercive solicitation techniques used by organizations claiming charitable purposes;
2. That there is a threat to the public welfare by this organization which raises money by appeals to charity and uses the funds raised for non-charitable and criminal purposes;
3. That there is inadequate investigation and regulation of this group by the city and by the state, as well as inadequate remedy for people who have been defrauded by this organization;

That the "church" presents a threat to the health and safety of the citizens of Clearwater by overcrowded, unhealthful and unregulated living conditions in which there is a serious risk of the spread of communicable diseases;

5. That the "church" performs illegal marriages, avoiding the laws of the state intended to prevent the spread of disease, bigamy, and illegitimacy;
6. That the children in Scientology suffer from lack of proper education, neglect, and unhealthful and abusive conditions;
7. That public officials and private citizens in Clearwater have been subjected to corrupt, covert, and illegal forms of intimidation; that public agencies and private groups have been unlawfully infiltrated;

that the church has corruptly influenced elections by covert and illegal means; and that all such acts have gone unpunished;

8. That the unregulated expansion of tax-exempt uses of property poses a serious threat to the financial well-being of the community, nullity of Clearwater.

The Report then proposes resolutions and ordinances regarding the following areas: housing; collection of taxes; violations of marriage laws; child care education; zoning; solicitation ordinances; public health and welfare; occupational licenses; influencing of elections; and intimidation of public officials and private citizens. (Exhibit 16)

Sadly, the intimidation of public officials and private citizens in Clearwater by Scientology has resulted in a condition of apathy and resignation in this community. However, the experience and testimony

presented in these hearings might be used to prevent the same situation from occurring in another city or country. The same policies used to "neutralize" (the term used in OSA) Clearwater will be used in Israel. Israel can take the same actions and tactics to be used in their country that were used in Clearwater; hopefully, the outcome will be different.

-25-

Summary:

L. Ron Hubbard, the founder of Scientology, once wrote: "Remember one thing, we are not running a business, we are running a government. We are in direct control of people's lives." (Exhibit 17) In another writing to his members, he stated words to the effect that "by the time anyone figures out what we are up to, it will be too late."

Scientology in the U.S. and abroad has continued to expand unopposed for forty years because of the protection provided to religious organizations by the U.S. Constitution. Scientology has exploited that constitutional protection, using this protection as a "cover" for its complex web of criminal activities and violations of the basic human rights of its adherents who are unwittingly lured into participation in activities calculatedly designed to defraud them of both their minds and their money. Scientology practices upon its naive victims a mental, emotional, spiritual and financial rape.

Inside Scientology one finds thousands of tirelessly devoted individuals who believe themselves to be working for a humanitarian organization dedicated only to the prospect of "total freedom for mankind." For the most part these underpaid and overworked "staff members" know nothing about the controversial history of their organization, the vast reserves of gold stored worldwide the vast web of criminal activities being carried out by OSA. These people have long ago severed the ties between themselves and the "real world": the lives, families and friends they had before joining Scientology. It is usually only years, even decades later that these people will emerge from Scientology physically, emotionally, spiritually, and financially devastated. These people are the real fruits of Scientology.

To this point, the government in this country has failed to take a decisive stand against the atrocity called Scientology, again because it is nervous about prosecuting a "church." Eventually, however, the outrage of thousands of individuals and families who have been destroyed by Scientology may finally

force some branch of the government into action. It may be that such action will occur sooner in a smaller country such as Israel, where the mere fact of geographical size and distance is in itself not an obstacle to action.

There is little organized resistance to Scientology in the United States this time. Part of the reason for this is the fact that the victims of

'26-

Scientology do emerge from their experience in this cult in such a condition of devastation and terror. For many, it takes years to recover from the emotional and financial damage. Some never do recover. However, when such an evil as Scientology exists, it is inevitable that sooner or later, some sort of organized resistance will emerge as a product of the anger of its victims. There are in fact signs that such organization is beginning to emerge in this country. Certainly there are individuals here who do carry on, as best they can, efforts to learn the unlearned and to counsel those who have become the victims of Scientology. That these efforts will eventually evolve into some sort of effective organization remains to be seen, but is probably inevitable.

*** EXHIBITS ***

Exhibit 1: Make Money Policy from Exhibit H
2: Wollersheim 17-page document

3: Propaganda - Exhibit A (use the following):
The World is Ours

The Aims of Scientology
Your Post
Auditors

We are the Free People

Scientology: The Philosophy of a New Age
How We Work on the Third Dynamic
The Eighteenth A.C.C.
Safeguarding Technology
Purpose

Keeping Scientology Working

4: Sea Org contract from Exhibit H

5: OT3 and OT8 bulletins from Exhibit D

6: Pregrange: Intelligence: Internal Security from Exhibit M

7: The Only Valid Sec Check from Exhibit G

8: Whole Track Sec Check from Exhibit G

9: Children's Sec Check from Exhibit G

10: The OSA training checksheet from Exhibit K

11: OSA criminal policies from Exhibit M

Re: Red Box

Basic and Essential Security of Bi Operations Material
Vetting Hat Write-up

Re: Coding/Ordering of Messages Re: Bi Activities
Intelligence Specialist Training Routine - TR L

Drill
Burglary

Intelligence Bureau Stat
Safe U.S.

F~hibits (con't):

Re: Intelligence
Walk-ins
De-bugging

Programme: Intelligence: Internal Security
Re: Security and Theft of Materials
Security

List of Nat'l Agencies Wit~olding Files
12: Operation PC Freakout from Exhibit M

13: OSA criminal operations fron] Balibit L
Project Tricycle

Re: China Shop~ Clean~ater Sun
Re: Prediction in Clean{ater
Operation Speedy Conzales
Operation Normandy

Prograr~ne: Humanist Humiliation

Progrmm: Snow White

Final Report and transcripts from the 1982 Clearwater hearings
]5. Hubbard's quote on Scientology being- a government from E~hibit H

=====

If this is a copyrighted work, you are acknowledging by receipt of this document from FACTNet that on the basis of reasonable investigation, you have not been to obtain a copy elsewhere at a fair price, and that you are and will abide by the following copyright warning.

WARNING CONCERNING COPYRIGHT RESTRICTIONS: The copyright law of the United States (Title 17, United States Code) governs the making of photo copies or other reproductions of copyrighted material. Under certain conditions specified by law, libraries and archives are authorized to furnish a photocopy or other reproduction. One of these specified conditions is that the photocopy or reproduction is not to be "used for any purpose other than private study, scholarship, or research." If a user makes a request for, or later uses, a photocopy or reproduction for purposes in excess of "fair use," that user may be liable for copyright infringement.

FACTNet reserves the right to refuse to accept an order for copying or other duplication, or delivery of copied or duplicated material if, in its judgment, fulfillment of the order would involve violation of copyright law.

DOS FILENAME OF TEXT FILE: RPT.TXT

DOS FILENAME OF IMAGE FILES: none

ADMINISTRATIVE CODE: A2

SECURITY CODE: GP

DISTRIBUTION CODE:

NAME FOR BBS: "Report on Scientology" prepared by Margery Wakefield for the Israeli government.

SORT TO: scn\general

CONTRIBUTOR: Margery Wakefield

LOC. OF ORIG: FACT

NOTES: OCR is corrected only for the first several pages.

For additional verification see image files contained in the file with same name and .ZIP extension.

UPDATED ON:

UPDATED BY:

=====

From harringtonj-smtc@nova.novanet.org Fri Mar 24 21:56:58 GMT 1995

Lest there be any doubt about the practice of the Church of Scientology "culling" potential blackmail material from the confidential records of its members, here is the original document that authorized this activity.

This action continues to this day and Church members seeking to purchase the Upper Level "OT" levels are required to pay for extensive "Security Checks" called OT eligibility checks. Members are required to disclose the most intimate details of ones personal, sexual, and financial life, and the names and addresses of all friends and relatives. In the event the member leaves the church, speaks out about it, or requests a refund, all this data can be leaked out. Blackmail operating under the cloak of "religion".

Joe

The oppressive methods that the Church of Scientology takes against its "enemies" have been well-documented over the years.

What follows is the verbatim transcript of an actual Church documents that was entered in a Court case in 1984. My commentary follows.

GUARDIAN ORDER

GO 121669 MSH

16 December, 1969

To: All D/A/Guardians for Intelligence

PROGRAMME: INTELLIGENCE: INTERNAL SECURITY

OBSERVATION: The enemy has used the method of infiltration to obtain information against ourselves as known from incidences in South Africa, Edinburgh, and Washington, D.C.

The enemy has also "turned" and used as double agents staff members as revealed by Maurice Johnson at Saint Hill and Barbara Peake in Melbourne.

Further, the enemy has used former disaffected staff members, Scientologists or relatives of Scientologists in their attacks - Phillip Wearne and Doug Moon in Australia, Jean Kennedy and Gene Van Niakerk in South Africa, Michael Parnetta and Mrs. Henslow in England, Eleanor Turner and the former Mrs. Elmo Troup in America and the O'Donnel family in New Zealand, to name but a few of the outstanding examples.

Although infiltrators and double agents can create more internal chaos and disorder in an organization, the enemy has been most successful in their attacks through the use of disaffected staff, Scientologists or relatives of Scientologists and the biggest gross error an organization can make as regards its own security is violation of the HCO Policy letter of 27 Oct, 1964, "Policies on Physical Healing, Insanity and Potential Trouble Sources."

The duty of keeping the organization secure belongs in the HCO Division, both in RAP and Inspections and Reports, but the Intelligence Bureau has learned through long experience that it cannot leave this function entirely up to HCO and where it has done so, it has had to suffer the consequences. Thus this programme is a vital one.

MAJOR TARGET: To use any and all means to detect any infiltration, double agent or disaffected staff member, Scientologist or relatives of Scientologists and by any and all means to render null any potential harm such have rendered or might render to Scientology or Scientologists.

VITAL TARGETS:

1. This programme is to be done by the Asst. Guardian or the D/A/Guardian for Intelligence, if this post is held separately.

OPERATING TARGETS:

1. To make full use of all files on the organization to affect your major target. These include personnel files, Ethics files, dead files, Central files, training files, processing files, and requests for refunds.

2. To assemble full data by investigation of each person located for possible use in case of attack or for use in preventing attack and to keep files of such.

3. To be alert to usual security precautions and to see that these are performed by the organization; such as proper locking of the premises, security of keys, locking of files, the changing of locks if keys have been lost, proper safes, etc.

4. To keep off staff and org line any person who has ever betrayed Scientology or who has threatened to betray or blackmail Scientology.

5. To ensure the Policy Letter on Physical Healing, Insanity and Potential Trouble Source is not violated and to be alert to any possible violation.

6. To maintain a good liaison line to Ethics and ensure that the Ethics Officer alerts you to any person who might attack Scientology.

7. To be alert to any organizational theft or disappearance of records and files as a possible indication of an infiltration or double agent. Infiltrators are frequently those who have recently "joined" Scientology and so can be watched. Double agents are

usually detested by natter, down stats, disorder in their area and no case gain.

8. To be effective and imaginative in your collection of data and in your actions to nullify any attack or threat of attack.

9. To keep your Asst. Guardian fully advised and the D/Guardian for /Intelligence WW, who will inform the Guardian WW in such matters.

PRODUCTION TARGET: This is a continuing Programme on which Projects will be issued from time to time.

Mary Sue Hubbard

CS-G

Comments:

Mary Sue Hubbard was the wife of L.Ron Hubbard. "CS-G" stands for Commodore's Staff, Guardian. In 1969 Hubbard was aboard a converted ferry that the Church had purchased. The official Church line is that Hubbard resigned as the Executive Director of the Scientology Worldwide operation in 1966, however the evidence is overwhelming that Hubbard continued to micro-manage every aspect of the organization. Several years earlier Hubbard established the SEA ORGANIZATION. The Sea Org was a small, zealous group of Scientologists that manned several vessels that Hubbard called his "flotilla". Hubbard called himself the "Commodore" and Sea Org members wore naval uniforms, saluted each other, and had enlisted and officer ranks to distinguish themselves. Hubbard gave his wife a life-time appointment as Controller of the Scientology Worldwide (WW) operation. Hubbard paid his Sea Org members \$30 a week, plus room and board. The pay has remained the same over the years.

"The enemy" mentioned in the document is vague, however several years earlier, shortly after Hubbard made the legendary discovery of the Mystery of OT III while he was aboard ship, he made an audio recording of his experience and it was called "Ron's Journal". Copies were made and distributed to every Scientology organization in the world. The airing of "Ron's Journal" was a special event for all staff members.

Ron's Journal gave an account of how he single-handedly managed to traverse the "Wall of Fire" on OT III, nearly losing his life. The "Only One" who managed to do it and come out alive in the last 76 million years.

Hubbard announced that his investigation has revealed the actual identity of the "Suppressives" who were behind the "attacks" on Scientology and provided their names and the organizations they were connected to. The organizations included the AMA, the FDA, Law Enforcement and Intelligence Agencies in the United States, England, Russia, and South Africa, plus several International Banks.

The search for "Suppressives" quickly became the highest priority in Scientology organization and Hubbard released

numerous "Ethics" policy letters to detect "SPs" and released new "tech" to discover "SPs" that people undergoing auditing were connected to.

Hubbard's obsession with finding the SPs responsible for the troubles in his organization rapidly infected the whole Scientology network. He remained at sea to avoid the numerous enemies he perceived as hostile to his mission to produce a planet of Clears, free of the harmful effects of OT III.

In the 1970's, under Mary Sue Hubbard's direction, the Church of Scientology devised a plan to place clandestine Church members as employees in various U.S. government agencies that Hubbard considered "suppressive". This was a highly-secret operation, known only to the elite staff in the Guardian Office. Extrordinary steps were taken to conceal Hubbard's actual control of the overall operation.

In 1976 Hubbard sold off his fleet and went ashore in Florida. Numerous dummy corporations were set up to conceal any connection with Hubbard or Scientology. Hubbard set up elaborate precautions to conceal his actual whereabouts. Federal Law Enforcement agencies caught on to the Church plot to steal government records and Mary Sue Hubbard and several other Church leaders in the Guardian Office were indicted and convicted on Federal charges. Hubbard continued to elude detection or the serving of subpoenas.

All staff members are fully aware of the potential use of the most private details of their life and their personal transgressions should they later decide to leave Scientology and most former staff members are reluctant to speak out about abuses within the organization, for fear of the embarrassment the covert revelation of their personal records can cause.

Subject: Scientology infiltrates Russian administrations**Date: Fri, 06 Oct 1995 21:53:40 GMT****From: tilman@berlin.snafu.de (Tilman Hausherr)****Organization: Xenu's Ranch****Newsgroups: alt.religion.scientology, soc.culture.russian**

This article can be found in the magazine "Berliner Dialog". Editor in chief is Reverend Thomas Gandow (gandow@contrib.de), a well-known german cult expert.

<http://www.thur.de/religio/dialog/295/295sB.html>

HUBBARD COLLEGE IN RUSSIA

By Alexander Dvorkin

As we know, the first steps of scientology in Russia were connected to "Narconon". However, it seems that it found much more effective vehicle for the expansion. It is "administrative technology" provided by "Hubbard College". In the midst of economical chaos which now reigns in the former Soviet Union, the scientologists offer something that seems easy and effective way of managing the industrial enterprises, offices, banks, companies, etc. It is difficult to refuse their offer: they promise immediate sharp raise of productivity and profits for anybody that will install Hubbard system of administration at the given enterprise. They tell about thousands upon thousands of enterprises that work along Hubbard technology line. The list includes even such industrial giants as "Ford", "Folio" and "General Electrics".

Through the expansion of Hubbard College the scientologists seem to kill three birds with one stone: by establishing their footholds at the various enterprises they create their own financial empire; by infiltrating the administrative offices of the provincial governments they attempt to get hold on the ruling elite of the large territories; and last but not least they recruit the most reach and the most powerful people in the country. To reach this end scientologists cooperate with several travel agencies which organize luxurious Mediterranean tours. Among many attractions listed in the adds there is a mention about "absolutely free" courses of business administration offered by "the most famous throughout the world" Hubbard College from America. The courses can be taken between disco time and sunbathing, and the diploma is given at the end of the tour.

What is the result of this policy? Right now scientological system is already installed in the hundreds of factories, banks, insurance companies, etc. It means that scientology in fact effectively owns them. It is interesting that the special effort goes for infiltrating large industrial plants producing heavy machinery and military items. That is why the scientologists, pay special attention to the Urals where most of these plants are situated. By now they got into dozens of mammoth industrial plans in Perm and Ekaterinburg provinces. As the practice shows, the installation of Hubbard system at the plant means creation of Stalinist regime, speedy departure of the best specialists and many thousands of dollars paid to the scientologists in order to train those who have left. Media coverage of the life of one of the first plants that vent over

to "Hubbard Technology system" - the fan (ventilator) plant "Moven" in Moscow - read like the horror story. The power of hubbardists over "Moven" ended several months ago when the direction of the plant Mr.Mironov was murdered.

However, this story did not impress anybody and the activity of Hubbard College continues to grow. It seems that the scientologists are the most successful in Perm where they managed to convert the Mayor, Mr.Vladimir Fil. The founders and the proponents of Hubbard college in Perm are the city and provincial administration. Mr.Fil went through hubbardist training in Moscow and is about to continue it in L.A. Meanwhile he issued a decree that all his staff must adopt to Hubbard system of administration along with the borough governments. He even publicly vowed that the entire city of Perm (about 1,5 million population) will convert to Hubbard methods within 6 months. Moreover, the newly appointed president of the only local TV company in Perm is also a scientologist. Thus, the cult has in fact created a monopoly on electronic media in the area.

Surely, Perm is not the only example of the scientology advance in Russia. The mayor of Novgorod also went through Hubbard College training. The scientologists hosted a retreat for the mayors of the towns of Central Russia. So, much is to be seen ahead...

When the concerned individuals would address those responsible for installation of Hubbard colleges in their places and try to warn them about the dangers of scientology the answer always would be the same: Hubbard College is a totally independent structure which has nothing to do with the scientological ideas or structures.

While it is obvious that it is not so they would cling to this point and would not hear any arguments. So it is quite obvious that they deliberately turn away from the truth.

However, the truth cannot be hidden and even the most ardent proponents of Hubbard College cannot avoid but admit it.

Thus the words of the Mayor of Perm Vladimir Fil are highly characteristic. When the representatives of the city intellectual elite wrote an open letter to him explaining what the scientology is like, he dismissed it, saying that he is only interested in the technology invented by Hubbard while as far as he - Fil - is concerned he could not care less about Hubbard himself, who could have believed even in the devil, for all he cares!

Well, in this Mr.Fil is absolutely right - Hubbard did believe in the devil.

Subject: newsflash#3: Bavaria wants to observe scientology**Date: Sun, 15 Oct 1995 21:56:46 GMT****From: tilman@berlin.snafu.de (Tilman Hausherr)****Organization: Xenu's Ranch****Newsgroups: [alt.religion.scientology](#), [soc.culture.german](#)**

As first german state, Bavaria want to observe scientology and to forbid their business. A federally coordinated observation will be discussed on Tuesday.

The target is to forbid scientology to do their business with book sales and expensive courses. The infamous street advertising should also be forbidden, so the interior minister.

The magazine FOCUS has reported that politicians of CDU and SPD [the two main parties] want to regulate the psycho-market. The topic will be discussed on the cult-related work group of the SPD and on the yearly party conference of the CDU. The judge on the superior court Munich Jürgen Keltsch said that a law is needed to force businesses on the psycho-market to seriosity and to protect the citizen against abuse.

===== my comment =====

I don't like co\$, but I am against forbidding them, since the would just continue under another name. Besides, the news is false: scientology was already (and possibly still is ?) in the state of "Saarland", after had-been-scieno Jeanette Schweitzer widely reported the infiltration of the steel industry (by the infamous Gerhard Haag).

What I am asking for is to tax them, and to force them to pay their members, and to use ethical (I mean the real "ethical", not the scientology word, which means "according to scientology") business practices.

The psycho-service-law is a very good idea.

=====

Copyright dpa, 1995

Bayern will Scientology überwachen

München/Weiden (dpa) - Bayern will als erstes Bundesland die Scientology-Sekte überwachen und ihre Millionengeschäfte verbieten. Für eine gesetzliche Regelung des Psycho-Marktes gibt es Initiativen sowohl in der CDU und der SPD.

Eine "bundesweit abgestimmte Beobachtung durch den Verfassungsschutz" will Ministerpräsident Edmund Stoiber (CSU) an diesem Dienstag auf der Kabinettsitzung in Weiden beraten, berichtete die "Bild am Sonntag". Es gehe darum, "den Scientology-Organisationen ihr Gewerbe mit Bücherverkauf und teuren Kursen zu untersagen. Ebenso müssen wir ihre üble Straßenwerbung unterbinden", erläuterte Bayerns Innenminister Günther Beckstein (CSU) der Zeitung.


Beckstein meinte, wie ein Sprecher des Ministeriums dpa bestätigte, das Bundesinnenministerium sollte "ein Verbot der bundesweit agierenden und zentral gesteuerten Scientology-Sekte prüfen". Dazu werde er ein koordiniertes Vorgehen aller Behörden von Bund und Länder anregen.

Unterdessen berichtet das Nachrichtenmagazin "Focus", daß Politiker von CDU und SPD den sogenannten Psychomarkt gesetzlich regeln wollen.

Das Thema beschäftige sowohl den Arbeitskreis Sektenpolitik der SPD-Bundestagsfraktion als auch diesen Montag beginnenden CDU-Parteitag. Der Richter am Oberlandesgericht München, Jürgen Keltsch, sagte dem Magazin, es sei ein Gesetz nötig, das Anbieter auf dem Psychomarkt zur Seriosität verpflichte und den Bürger vor Mißbrauch der Psychotechniken schütze. dpa ko/ts os

--- Tilman Hausherr [KoX; awards: DB, SP decl. by Koos]
biz: <tilman@sietec.de> <URL:<http://www.sietec.de/>> (company page)
home: <tilman@berlin.snafu.de> <URL:<http://www.snafu.de/~tilman/>>

Resistance is futile. You will be enturbulated. Xenu always prevails.



From harringtonj@smtc@nova.novanet.org Wed Mar 8 11:30:07 GMT 1995

Scientology's Obstruction of Justice

(A personal experience)

In the mid 1970's, Federal Law Enforcement agencies in the United States discovered a plot by the Church of Scientology to place agents of its Guardian Office (GO) in sensitive positions in the agencies that were actively conducting criminal investigations of Church activities. Raids were made on the GO at various locations, documents were seized and senior GO leaders were indicted and convicted.

Hubbard's wife, Mary Sue Hubbard, was the senior official of the GO and the evidence is overwhelming that LRH was privy to all the activities of the GO and wrote extensive directives for GO operations. As Federal Law Enforcement agents closed in on the GO, Hubbard went into seclusion, never to be publically seen again. He deserted his family and his wife was convicted and did time in the federal prison at Terminal Island, CA.

In Scientology, a field staff member (FSM) is an independent commissioned salesman for the Church of Scientology. They sign up new prospects for Scientology services and receive 10-15% commissions when their "selectees" pay for the "services". As the ultimate cost of Scientology services can easily total \$300,000, being a FSM is potentially very lucrative.

In addition to generating income for the Church, FSMs are also used as field agents for the GO (renamed the Office of Special Affairs, (OSA), in the early 1980's).

Although the following document is about a GO operation that occurred in 1976, OSA conducts similar operations in 1995. Ongoing covert operations against ex-members, writers, journalists, psychiatrists, psychologists, Judges, lawyers, and inquisitive governments are directed by OSA.

FSMs/OSA field agents frequently post misinformation/disinformation on the Internet and other Computer networks. Recent attacks on FACTNET, Larry Wollersheim, Steve Fishman, Jon Atack, Dennis Erlich, and CAN officials etc are posted by FSMs, at the behest of OSA.

What follows is a document used in subsequent court cases involving the Church of Scientology. My comments in ().

21 July 1976

SECRET

OPERATION BULLDOZER LEAK

MAJOR TARGET:

To effectively spread the rumor that will lead government, media, and individual SPs to conclude that LRH has no formal control of the C of S and no legal liability for Church activity.

(The Church had spread the cover story that LRH resigned from all executive duties in 1966 and was not on the Church payroll. It was later learned that LRH had skimmed millions of dollars of Church funds and had placed them in numbered bank accounts in Europe. Hubbard's wife later testified in Court that Hubbard was the SOLE trustee of these funds.)

PRIMARY TARGETS;

- 1) All US B1 Sec are there on Post.
- 2) The purpose here, is to protect LRH from Legal Liability for any C of S activities.
- 3) All US B1 Secs are responsible. Each in his area, for seeing that this project gets done.
- 4) US BI Ops Net is responsible for the overall planning of this project.
- 5) Any debugging necessary on this project is to be done by each US B1 Sec working in liaison with US B1 Ops Net.
- 6) This project is not to impede upon any other projects/programmes etc that the Secs already have going.

VITAL TARGETS:

- 1) That all US B1 Secs ensure that their AGIs keep security in on this project.
- 2) That the AGIs recruit all the necessary FSMs to do this project.
- 3) That the names of all the Government, Media, and individual SPs be obtained for each area by the concerned AGIs.

("B1" was Bureau One, responsible for coordinating intelligence operations. "AGIs" was Asst Guardian, Intelligence, located at the lower level orgs)

OPERATING TARGETS:

Government:

1) Each AG I is to make a list of all the Government Bureaus/Departments/Organizations etc., in his area covering National State and City that have:

- a) Attacked Scientology in any fashion.
- b) Would have any interest in Scientology for any reason.

2) Each AG I is to work out a simple "cover story" for his FSM to use on this project. It can be something like the FSM is going to write a book on Scientology and just wants to get some information. FSM does NOT use his/her correct name on this cycle.

3) Each AG I recruits a reliable FSM to carry out this project. And ensures that security is "in" on the FSM.

4) Drill/bullbait/briefs the FSM on the following:

a) He will be visiting all proper people in each of the government agencies.

b) He will be giving out his "cover story" that in some way he is investigating the C of S.

c) During the interview, he will in several different ways mention that he has heard that LRH no longer has any control of the Church and that an ex-scientologist had shown some articles to the FSM that stated it had definitely been established that LRH had no liability for any Church activity. This should be presented in each interviews with very good "intention" that it is to be remembered.

d) Those areas that can not be reached for any reason, should be telephoned by the FSM and the cover story and rumor be given. Say if a Government Office were 2 hundred miles away.

5) FSM does his in person or telephone interviews and writes up clear reports on each interview's outcome. He should really "IMPINGE" when stating the rumors.

6) All AG Is see to it that the FSMs thoroughly complete all these Government Agencies on the list.

7) AG Is send up progress report on this action to their US B1 Secs.

MEDIA:

1) All AG Is are to make a list of all the Media and the specific individuals concerned (SPs) in their respective areas, that have printed entheta on Scientology.

2) All AG Is are to have the same FSM do targets 2-7 on the list of media.

INDIVIDUAL SPs

1) All AG Is who have penetration FSMs in any anti Scientology groups (Squirrels/Deprogramming Groups/etc.) are to contact these FSMs and work out with them the best approach to spread the

rumor, to all the individual SPs/SP groups/etc in each AG I's respective area.

The FSM would be telephoning these various SPs and stating something like. " Well you know that Hubbard has completely resigned from the Scientologists, don't you. I mean he doesn't control it at all any more. I've heard from several ex Scientologists I know, that several times different persons tried to get damages from Hubbard for something that the Scientology organization did but couldn't. Yes, several Court Cases have ruled that he isn't liable for anything the Scientologists do. I was even shown a few articles on it. Blab/blab/blab. This should really impinge.

SEE ATTACHED PATTEN FOR INCORPORATION INTO SPIEL WITH EACH PERSON.

AG Is should have a complete list of all the individual SPs in his area and ensure that the FSM or FSMs contact all of them.

Any AG I that has no penetration FSM in on any of these groups or individual SPs, should use the FSM recruited for first two solutions.

The same procedure should be followed by the FSM. Only (illegible) time telephone only. Any additional cover needed on (illegible) should be worked out by the AG I.

All AG Is are to write up a final Compliance Report on this act.

ACTION TARGET:

entire project should be completed 3 weeks from receipt.

HAT * Randy

Personal Note:

At the time this directive was written, I was on active duty in the U.S. Coast Guard. I was not currently active in Scientology, but I had indicated my past employment in a Scientology organization on my statement of personal history that was part of my service record.

I was not even aware of the raid that the FBI conducted on the GO facilities in Los Angeles, although I was working in Long Beach, 25 miles away.

Because of my PAST involvement with Scientology, the FBI and the Coast Guard conducted an investigation and I was involuntarily discharged from the Coast Guard, after 15 years of honorable service. During this period, I spoke with the President of the Church, Heber Jentzsch, and queried him about the allegations made by the government. He assured me the charges were baseless. This incident devastated my life and I've never really gotten over the injustice.

Jentzsch was criminally indicted in Spain in Dec 1994 and the

trial is tentatively scheduled for sometime in 1995.

OPERATION BULLDOZER LEAK was seized during the FBI investigation, and because the Coast Guard had made inquiries about the operation of Hubbard's "Sea Org", the Coast Guard automatically became an SP group. In retrospect, its obvious that after reading the seized documents and reviewing my service record, the government concluded I was a "PENETRATION FSM".

It was not until the late 1980's that I learned the GO had actually placed an agent, Sharon Thomas, as a secretary in the office of the Headquarters of Coast Guard Intelligence, Washington, D.C., at about the same time I was assigned to the 11th Coast Guard District in Long Beach, CA, as a Special Agent in the Coast Guard Intelligence and Law Enforcement Branch.

The twist on the story is this:

After I was involuntarily discharged from the Coast Guard because of allegations that I was a "Penetration FSM" for the CofS, the CofS "declared" me a "security risk" because of my connection to a "SP" group, the United States Coast Guard, and barred me from any further training or processing.

Joe

\015
DECLARATION OF STACY BROOKS YOUNG I, **Stacy Brooks Young**, declare as\015
follows:\015

\015
1. I am over the age of 18 years.\015

\015
2. I have been retained as an\015
expert consultant and expert witness by Dr. Uwe Geertz's counsel in the\015
case captioned Church of Scientology International v. Steven Fishman and\015
Uwe Geertz, #CV-6426-HLH (Tx) currently pending for purposes of hearing\015
the accompanying motion in the United States District Court, Central\015
District of California. The statements herein are of my own personal\015
knowledge and if called upon as a witness, I can testify competently\015
thereto.\015

\015
3. This declaration is submitted in support of Defendant Dr.\015
Geertz's motion for costs, fees, expenses and sanctions following the\015
dismissal of this action with prejudice by the court on February 22, 1994.\015
\015

4. As a result of my nearly 15 years in Scientology, I am qualified to\015
discuss the policies, procedures and practices of Scientology, including\015
the issue of "of and concerning," plaintiff CSI's assertion that it moved\015
to dismiss this case because of "harassment" by Dr. Geertz's counsel,\015
Scientology's hatred of psychology, Scientologys practice of harassing its\015
critics, the treatment Steven Fishman received at the hands of this\015
organization, and the fact that Miscavige and his lieutenants are managing\015
agents of CSI. My Extensive History in the upper Echelons of Scientology\015
Management Qualify Me as an Expert.\015

\015
5. I was a member of the Church of\015
Scientology for nearly 15 years, from January 1975 until July 1989. From\015
October 1975 until I left, **I was a member of the Sea Organization**, the\015
most dedicated group of Scientologists in the entire organization. I spent\015
most of my time from 1978 until 1989 in a highly confidential section of\015
Scientology management which was known as the **Guardian Office** until 1982\015
and is today called the Office of Special Affairs. This section of\015
Scientology is responsible for dealing with all external public relations,\015
all matters relating to civil litigation or criminal matters, all\015
governmental relations such as the IRS, and all critics of Scientology.\015

\015
6. During my tenure in Scientology I acquired extensive knowledge of the\015
Scientology counseling methods known as auditing, the methods of training\015
staff members and public Scientologists, the methods of dealing with\015
non-Scientologists (known as "external publics"), former Scientologists\015
and/or critics, known as enemies or suppressive, and the administrative\015
and management procedures of the organization.\015

\015
7. My first experience\015
with Scientology was at the Mission of Atlanta, Georgia, where I attended\015
a series of introductory lectures about the mind. I received some basic\015
auditing and took several basic courses.\015

\015
8. I joined the Sea Organization\015
("Sea Org," or "SO") at the Advanced Organization in Los Angeles ("AOLA")\015
in October 1975. To become a Sea Org or SO member one must sign a\015
billion-year contract to confirm one's dedication to scientology and\015
"clearing the planet" (see explanation below).\015

\015
9. All staff members\015

involved in delivering the confidential upper levels of Scientology\015 auditing and all staff members involved in Scientology management ~~must be~~\015 ~~members~~ of the Sea Org. They live communally and are under the absolute\015 authority of the Sea Org command lines 24 hours a day. I was paid \$24 per\015 week - when I was paid.\015

\015
10. The Sea Org has total authority over all\015 Scientology and Scientology-related organizations, including all nonprofit\015 and for-profit corporations. It cuts across all corporate boundaries and\015 can take over any Scientology organization without notice. Any\015 Scientologist who refuses to submit to Sea Org authority is declared a\015 "suppressive person" and expelled from Scientology.\015

\015
11. All\015 Scientologists consider that Scientology is the only way for Mankind to go\015 free. For a Scientologist this means getting "exterior" to the physical\015 body ("exteriorization") and, indeed, to the entire physical universe. In\015 fact, L. Ron Hubbard created a new category of humanity for those who go\015 through all the levels of Scientology processing; they transcend the state\015 of Homo Sapiens and become what he called Homo Novis (similar to\015 Nietzsche's Superman). Scientologists expect that once they have attained\015 t's state they will be free to travel throughout the galaxies, freeing\015 others who are in the trap of the physical universe.\015

\015
12. The route out of\015 the physical universe trap is called "The Bridge to Total Freedom." Every\015 Scientologist is at one stage or another on this Bridge, and they are\015 expected to get everyone else moving on this Bridge as well. The idea is\015 for everyone on Earth to get exterior to the physical universe. The only\015 people who aren't included are "suppressive," meaning those who have been\015 critical of Scientology.\015

\015
13. The Bridge is composed of a series of auditing processes, an auditing\015 process being a set of specific questions and commands. The person who\015 asks these questions and delivers these commands is called the "auditor." \015 The person who answers the questions and carries out the commands is the\015 "preclean," since the first major milestone on the Bridge is called\015 "going Clear." After one attests to the state of Clear, one moves on to\015 the confidential upper levels of auditing known as the "Operating Thetan"\015 c "OT levels" ("thetas" being Hubbard's term for the person without his\015 or her body).\015

\015
14. At the level of OT 3, one is allowed access to\015 handwritten notes by Hubbard which detail a terrible disaster that\015 happened in this sector of the universe 75 million years ago. The head of\015 the Galactic Federation, whose name was Xenu, solved a massive\015 overpopulation problem by rounding up billions upon billions of people and\015 transporting them in blocks of ice to several volcanoes on Earth, which\015 was known as Teegeack at the time. They were dumped near the volcanoes\015 and subjected to H-bomb explosions. At the same time, they were subjected\015 to a series of images which were electronically driven, or "implanted,"\015 into their minds. After the "implant" was completed, these disembodied\015 beings were transported to Hawaii and Las Palmas where they were packaged\015 up into "clusters." Attached hereto as Exhibit 1 is a copy of the OT 3\015 materials.\015

\015
15. According to Hubbard, the OTT implant is rigged to kill\015 anyone who finds out about it before they have received the lower levels\015 of Scientology processing. Needless to say, it is a major revelation to\015

discover that one is covered from head to foot with these disembodied\015 beings, called "body thetans" or "BTs" in Scientology. One has literally\015 millions, or even billions of these BTs, and they have to be audited on\015 very precise processes to get them to wake up and disengage themselves (or\015 "blow") from the person's body. The idea is that once all of these BTs\015 have been gotten rid of, one will be able to exteriorize from the body at\015 will. These BTs can cause illness and even insanity if they become upset,\015 so it is important to get rid of them as quickly as possible and to make\015 sure one has done a very thorough job of it. (See Exhibit 2, "What the\015 Church of Scientology Doesn't Want You to know," by Jeff Jacobsen and\015 Robert P.J. Day, and "The Total Freedom Trip," by Jon Atack, for more\015 information about the practices of Scientology.)\015

\015
16. I was a staff member\015 at the Advanced Organization of Los Angeles ("AOLA") from October 1975\015 through December 1978. AOLA is one of a handful of organizations around\015 the world where people can go to receive the confidential upper levels of\015 Scientology processing. I audited hundreds of hours on public preclears as\015 well as staff members to prepare them for their upper levels, or OT\015 levels. (When a person begins their OT levels they no longer have an\015 auditor. They graduate to what is called "solo auditing," a process in\015 which they audit their own BTs.) I also did many security checks on staff\015 members. A security check is a method of inducing a person to confess to\015 crimes, particularly crimes against Scientology.\015

\015
17. In 1977 I was posted\015 as Interne Supervisor at AOLA. In this capacity I supervised\015 auditors-in-training, known as internes, to certify them as qualified\015 professional auditors. To perform this function I had to understand\015 auditing procedures precisely, from the most basic processes to the\015 advanced processes and procedures of Class 6 and Class 8, which are\015 advanced levels of expertise, so that I could recognize whether or not the\015 internes were conducting themselves as proper auditors.\015

\015
18. As a result\015 of my experiences at AOLA I acquired a high level of expertise as a "tech\015 terminal," meaning one who is knowledgeable about the technical\015 application of Scientology auditing and training methods.\015

\015
19. At the end\015 of 1977 I transferred to the United States Guardian's Office ("US GO") in\015 Los Angeles. I was a staff member in the USGO from January 1978 through\015 January 1982. The Guardian's Office was the part of Scientology that\015 handled Public Relations, Intelligence and Legal matters for Scientology.\015

\015
20. Because of my technical background, I was posted as the Organizing\015 Officer ("Org Officer") for the Public Relations Bureau and, later, as the\015 Org Officer for the entire Guardian's Office. As the Org Officer my\015 functions included the handling of all personnel and organizational\015 matters, such as correcting a staff member who made mistakes, taking care\015 of staff members who were sick or upset or in trouble, recruiting new\015 people for staff, and promoting or demoting staff members as needed. I was\015 also responsible for the establishment and proper administration of all\015 the Guardian's Office personnel throughout the United States. Because the\015 Guardian's Office oversaw certain aspects of the administration of all\015 other Scientology organizations, I became very familiar with the overall\015 structure of Scientology and how the various organizations interact with\015 each other and with the outside world.\015

\015
21. In early 1982 I was assigned\015

to a unit known as Special Project as a Public Relations Assistant under\015 my husband, Robert Vaughn Young. In this position I became familiar with\015 the L. Ron Hubbard archives material, which was the complete collection of\015 all of Hubbard's personal papers, including diaries, letters, and notes\015 that he had kept from a very early age.\015

\015
22. Several months later Special\015 Project became what is now Author Services, Inc. ("ASI"), a for-profit\015 company whose ostensible purpose was to be L. Ron Hubbard's literary\015 agency. I was taken out of public relations and made the Organizing\015 Officer for ASI in April 1982. In this position I worked directly for\015 David Miscavige, who was Chairman of the Board of ASI ("COB ASI"), to\015 carry out his orders concerning the staff of ASI.\015

\015
23. David Miscavige,\015 known as DM, has been the head of Scientology since 1981. His loyalty to\015 L. Ron Hubbard and Scientology is absolute, and he is utterly ruthless\015 about maintaining his power. He moved the seat of power from ASI to the\015 Religious Technology Center (RTC) in*1987, because it was more defensible\015 to run Scientology from a non-profit corporation than from a for-profit\015 corporation. At that point he appointed himself Chairman of the Board of\015 R T ("COB RTC"), which is his current title.\015

\015
24. Although ASI was\015 established as a for-profit, non-religious corporation, in reality while\015 DM was COB ASI the staff of ASI ran the entire Scientology network. ASI\015 had complete\015

\015
control over the management of all Scientology orgs and missions, all\015 Office of Special Affairs activities, all transfers of funds between\015 church accounts and LRH accounts, every aspect of the life of anyone who\015 was a Scientologist, whether staff or public. These powers were moved to\015 RTC in 1987, as explained above. \015

\015
25. Because of my experience in ASI I am\015 familiar with the day-to-day activities and procedures of the highest\015 levels of management of Scientology. \015

\015
26. I have firsthand knowledge of\015 the establishment of the corporate structure of Scientology as it now\015 exists, having worked with the staff who were responsible for creating it.\015 The purpose of this activity was to create an impenetrable, legally\015 defensible network of corporations such that neither the IRS nor any other\015 legitimate agency of government could "pierce the corporate veil" of\015 Scientology organizations, thereby freeing Scientology management to\015 transfer funds between organizations without concern for the law. \015

\015
27. I\015 am also familiar with the absolute authority which the highest levels of\015 Scientology management exercise over every aspect of Scientology and\015 Scientology-related organizations, whether "church" or "secular," and the\015 ruthlessness with which any sign of disloyalty or disaffection is handled. \015

\015
28. In September 1982 I was assigned to the Rehabilitation Project Force\015 ("RPF"), the Scientology version of a prison camp. I was assigned to the\015 RPF because I was openly critical of DM's coercive and degrading treatment\015 of staff members. I was on the RPF in Los Angeles for eight months. \015

\015
29. ■■■■■ result of this experience I am familiar with the absolute ■■■■■rol\015

~~which the highest levels of Scientology management have over the behavior~~ and thought processes of every Sea Org member. There is only one way for a good Sea Org member to behave and think, and any deviation from this is punished immediately and severely. In turn, it is the responsibility of all members of Sea Org management to bring about the same pattern of behavior and thought in all Scientologists under their authority, regardless of whether those under their authority are part of the "church" or the various "secular" arms of Scientology. This distinction means nothing within Scientology; it was created purely to facilitate dissemination of Scientology and to fend off Scientologists "enemies," such as the IRS.

30. From May 1983, when I was allowed off the RPF, until July 1984 I was posted as Course Supervisor at the International Training Organization (ITO) in Los Angeles. From this position I trained hundreds of fledgling Scientology executives from all over the world on the administrative and management policies of L. Ron Hubbard known as the Organization Executive Course, or OEC. As a result of this experience I am very familiar with the administrative policy of Scientology and know that Hubbard formulated it to facilitate the establishing and organizing of his worldwide network of Scientology organizations.

31. In August 1984 I was transferred back to the PR Division of the Guardian's Office, which ~~at that time had been renamed the Office of Special Affairs~~. My primary functions were as a writer and editor for FREEDOM Magazine, a Scientology publication created to serve as a vehicle for attacking individuals and groups who were perceived as threats to Scientology. I also wrote articles for other Scientology publications.

32. As a result of my experience as a writer for these different Scientology publications, I am familiar with Scientology's practice of changing its story for whatever public it is trying to manipulate. Often I rewrote the same basic story for each publication, completely changing the wording and overall thrust of the story to appeal to the different publics that were going to read it.

33. As a writer in OSA I was also responsible for writing rebuttals of negative stories about Scientology that were published in various newspapers across the country. I was also assigned to write rebuttals of books that were published that were negative about Hubbard and Scientology. As a result of this work I became very familiar with the policies and practices of Scientology with regard to individuals and groups that criticize the organization. ~~I have personal knowledge that the practices which were formerly called "Fair Game" continue to be employed,~~ although the term "Fair Game" is no longer used. These tactics are laid out in many of the key policies that are studied and applied by staff of OSA.

34. In July 1989 my husband and I left Scientology. We lived in San Diego from 1989 until August 1991, at which time we moved to Newport Beach. We are currently living in Corona del Mar, California, which is part of Newport Beach.

CSI Had no Standing to File This Case.

35. As described above, I spent nearly 13 years at the highest echelons of Scientology management. My experience includes substantial time in the Guardian's Office ("GO"), its successor, the Office of Special Affairs ("OSA"), and also at Author Services, Inc. ("ASI").

\015

36. The GOROSA branch\015 of Scientology is responsible for dealing with all matters outside the\015 confines of the cult itself, particularly public relations, litigation,\015 gathering of intelligence information on critics, carrying out harassment\015 and intimidation campaigns on critics, etc. The GOROSA branch is also\015 responsible for maintaining the facade of corporate integrity for the\015 benefit of the courts, the Internal Revenue Service ("IRS") and other\015 governmental agencies. \015

\015

37. ASI is a for-profit corporation with offices\015 in Hollywood, California. ASI manages all of L. Ron Hubbard's ("Hubbard")\015 literary affairs. ASI was first created in 1982. To this day ASI accepts\015 only proven members of the Sea Organization ("Sea Org"), an unincorporated\015 organization which, under the leadership of David Miscavige ("Miscavige"),\015 actually runs all of Scientology. \015

\015

38. When ASI was created, it managed\015 the entire Scientology empire. Miscavige arrogated the corporate title of\015 Chairman of the Board of ASI ("COB ASI") to himself. \015

\015

39. In 1987, Miscavige moved his base of operations from the ASI facility \015 in Hollywood\015

to the high-security Scientology compound near Hemet, California. In\015 conjunction with this move,\015

Miscavige gave himself the new title of Chairman of the Board of\015 Religious TEchnology Center ("COB RTC").\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

\015

From alerma@DGS.dgsys.com Thu Oct 13 15:26:48 1994\015 Received: from cais.cais.com (cais.com [199.0.216.4]) by news.primenet.com (8. <cultxpt@PrimeNet.Com>; Thu, 13 Oct 1994 15:26:47 -0700\015

Received: from DGS.dgsys.com (dgs.dgsys.com [204.97.64.1]) by cais.cais.com (8 <cultxpt@PrimeNet.Com>; Thu, 13 Oct 1994 19:27:03 -0400\015

Received: by DGS.dgsys.com (5.0/SMI-SVR4)\015

id AA12786; Thu, 13 Oct 1994 18:20:42 +0500\015

Date: Thu, 13 Oct 1994 18:20:40 -0400 (EDT)\015

From: alerma <alerma@DGS.dgsys.com>\015

Subject: part 4 A Forwarded mail.... (fwd)\015

To: cultxpt@PrimeNet.Com\015

Cc: and@DGS.dgsys.com\015

Message-Id: <Pine.3.89.9410131821.A12647-0100000@DGS>\015

Mime-Version: 1.0\015
Content-Type: TEXT/PLAIN; charset=US-ASCII\015
content-length: 7099\015
Status: OR\015
\015
\015
\015

----- Forwarded message -----\015
Date: Thu, 13 Oct 1994 12:43:29 -0400 (EDT)\015
From: alerma <alerma@DGS>\015
To: homer%MATH.CORNELL.EDU@vm.ucs.UAlberta.CA\015
Subject: part 4 A Forwarded mail....\015
\015
\015
\015

----- Forwarded message -----\015
Date: Thu, 13 Oct 1994 00:21:28 -0400 (EDT)\015
From: alerma <alerma@DGS>\015
To: LRH-L@cornell.edu\015
Subject: \015
\015
\015

Religious Technology Center ("COB RTC"). In reality, Miscavige's power is\015
such that he can give himself whatever title he wants in whatever\015
corporation he chooses. \015
\015

40. I know from my personal experience in GOROSA\015
and in ASI that the corporate structure of Scientology is purely to obtain\015
legal and tax advantages. When Hubbard was still alive, the complex\015
corporate structure also served as a shield to protect Hubbard from\015
litigation and criminal charges. The corporate integrity has certainly\015
never been a matter of interest to anyone outside of the GOROSA or its\015
senior echelons, such as RTC or ASI. **The corporate structure is not a**\015
matter of interest or concern within the cult itself. Most Scientologists\015
do not think of Scientology in corporate terms at all. Instead of thinking\015
of plaintiff Church of Scientology International ("CSI") or any other\015
corporate entity when Scientology is mentioned, Scientologists think of\015
all the organizations which apply the Hubbard Technology. Those\015
organizations which apply the Hubbard Technology include the\015
geographically located Churches of Scientology (e.g., Church of\015
Scientology of San Francisco, Church of Scientology of Miami, etc.), the\015
geographically located missions (e.g., Church of Scientology, Mission of\015
Ft. Lauderdale, etc.), the management organizations (e.g., RTC and CMO\015
Int), the public self-improvement organizations which apply the Hubbard\015
Tech (e.g., WISE, Narconon, Sterling Management, etc.), **the front groups**\015
with political action agendas (e.g., Citizens Commission for Human Rights,\015
etc.), and the autonomous, extra-corporate organizations for\015
administrative and money management (e.g., Sea Org and Flag Banking\015
Office, etc.) \015
\015

41. In short, even dedicated Scientologists would not think\015
of CSI when they read about "Scientology" or "Scientologists," such as in\015
the two paragraphs of the May 1991 Time Magazine article which are the\015
subject of this litigation. Additionally, even a Scientologist would not\015
think of CSI if he or she read something about the "church" in material\015
referring to Scientology. Certainly no one outside of the Scientology cult\015
would think of CSI when reading about "Scientology," "Scientologists," or\015
the "church," for the obvious reason that no one outside of Scientology is\015
likely to have heard of CSI as distinct from Scientology as a general,\015
generic amalgam of organizations. Indeed, since CSI was created in late\015

1981 and throughout my tenure at the upper echelons of Scientology, I\015 found that only a small circle of Scientologists, in OSA and the senior\015 management such as RTC and ASI, made reference to CSI on a regular basis.\015 These are the persons who need to maintain the facade of corporate\015 separateness to the outside world so as to obtain various tax and\015 litigation advantages. \015

\015
42. For CSI to claim that the words "Scientology," \015 "Scientologist" and/or "the church, " as they appear in that portion of\015 the Time Magazine article which mentions Dr. Geertz and Mr. Fish man, are\015 "of and concerning" CSI is disingenuous in the extreme. Based on my\015 education, training and experience in Scientology, the words\015 "Scientology," "Scientologist" and "the church" as they appear in the Time\015 Magazine article can only be reasonably understood to refer to Scientology\015 generally, generically and without particular reference to any one of the\015 hundreds of Scientology corporations that have been established for\015 various purposes over the years. The vast majority of the corporate\015 entities do not appear on the scientology command chart. The fact that\015 separate corporations exist on paper has no effect on the daily life of\015 Scientologists or the operation of Scientology. The corporate boundaries\015 are ignored. \015

\ 5
43. When I was a staff member in the GO, ASI and later OSA,\015 it was common knowledge that the corporate structure was a contrivance\015 created purely because of the tactical benefits it bestowed on Scientology\015 for purposes of interfacing with the "wog" world. All Scientologists,\015 particularly Sea Org members, regard the Sea Org as an elite group of\015 superior beings whose job it is to get everyone else in the world into\015 Scientology. Meanwhile, Sea Org members and Scientologists generally\015 refer laughingly to unenlightened non-Scientologists as "wogs." \015

\015
44. To get along with these wogs and keep them from hindering the forward\015 progress of Scientology, it is necessary to create the appearance that\015 Scientology operates by the same rules as the rest of society. A large\015 part of OSA's role is to maintain this facade through public relations and\015 legal actions. In fact, Scientologists think it is quite funny when wogs\015 accept the facade as real. The arrogance of Scientology's senior\015 management, and the contempt in which it holds any court or other wog body\015 which falls for the masquerade is astounding. \015

\015
4 The contempt became\015 apparent to me in conversations I had with other staff, in comments made\015 by Miscavige, Norman Starkey, Lyman Spurlock, Steve Marlowe, and other\015 executives during staff meetings, and in instructions I was given about\015 how to position certain agencies and individuals when I wrote stories for\015 Scientology propaganda publications, including FREEDOM Magazine. \015

\015
46. I was in the FREEDOM Magazine department of the public relations \015 division of\015 OSA US during the trial of Wollersheim v. Church of Scientology of\015 California, in 1985. At the time, OSA US was still, for corporate\015 purposes, part of the Church of Scientology of California ("CSC"). \015

\015
47. One afternoon, I was informed, along with the other staff members of the\015 FREEDOM office, that our office was to be moved to another location across\015 the street, outside the big blue Scientology complex which used to be\015 Cedars of Lebanon Hospital at Sunset and Berendo in Hollywood, California.\015 We were instructed to move to an office on the second floor of B building\015 on Catalina Street. I was told that the FREEDOM office and the Treasury\015 office of OSA US were to move out of the Scientology Complex because it\015

looked like Lawrence Wollersheim was going to win his suit against CSC and\015 the corporation had to be gutted of all its assets before the decision was\015 handed down. All that would be left of CSC would be a shell consisting of\015 a Treasury office and the FREEDOM office. When Wollersheim tried to\015 collect from CSC, he would discover that there were no assets at all in\015 CSC . \015

\015
48. We did move our office to the building on Catalina. The\015 Treasury office also moved. I was told by the Treasury Secretary, Rhea\015 Smith, that all of the assets of CSC had been taken out of the CSC\015 accounts. The motto of OSA US during the Wollersheim trial was "Not One\015 Thin Dime," meaning Scientology would never pay even a dime to Lawrence\015 Wollersheim. The OSA US\015

\015
\015
The OSA US staff were briefed on the gutting of CSC at a staff meeting, and\015 all of\015 the staff cheered because now Wollersheim couldn't get his hands on any\015 money even if he won his suit.\015

\015
49. This gutting of CSC to hide assets\015 from a litigant and then cheering about it at a staff meeting is an\015 example of the contempt in which the Scientology Command holds the UPS.\015 justice system. The corporate structure of Scientology is created and\015 recreated depending upon the convenience of the moment, as illustrated in\015 the above example.\015

\015
50. The idea that the remarks attributed to Fishman\015 and Geertz in the Time Magazine article upon which CSI's claims are\015 purportedly based refer to CSI rather than to Scientology generally is\015 absurd. **Inside the Scientology empire no one takes the corporate structure\015 seriously. The corporate structure is a contrivance to enable Scientology\015 to interface to its advantage with the "wog" world.** This Court should not\015 be fooled by the corporate sleight of hand which was attempted in this\015 case. "Scientology, "Scientologist" and "the church" refer to the\015 overall, generic empire of Scientology, not to CSI, and no one even within\015 Scientology would think of CSI when reading those words, much less the\015 general public.\015

\015
\015
It is CSI That is Harassing. Not the Defendants\015

_5
\015
51. CSI asserted that this case must be dismissed to protect several\015 Scientology\015 celebrities who were noticed for brief depositions not to exceed two hours\015 each. CSI claims that these celebrities were served for the express\015 purpose of harassment and abuse. CSI asserted that it feared these\015 celebrities would be exposed to confidential upper level materials if CSI\015 allowed them to be deposed. CSI further asserted that "CSI has seen its\015 religious tenets and scriptures assailed; it has been compelled to\015 produce or offer for deposition the religion's most senior ecclesiastical\015 leaders so they can be reviled; and it has endured a transparent campaign\015 to harass CSI into default." CSI cited this as its excuse to move to\015 dismiss this entire case.\015

\015
52. Nothing could be further from the truth.\015 The CSI manag- ing agents and the other Scientologists who have been\015 deposed in this case have been interrogated only about the use and misuse\015 of L. Ron Hubbard's technology ("Tech") for secular purposes. The fact\015

that the same Tech is also used for so-called religious purposes does not\015
make inquiry about the Tech a reviling of the Scientology belief system or\015
its most senior members.\015
\015

53. Even I, who spent many years helping to\015
create this kind of utterly hypocritical rhetoric for the Church of\015
Scientol-ogy, am stunned at this latest fantasy concocted by CSI.\015
\015

54. Dr. Geertz's attorneys have never expressed in my presence any intention\0
whatsoever to bring up Scientology's confidential upper level materials\015
during the deposition of the Scientology celebrities. I have been advising\015
Graham Berry and Gordon Calhoun, Dr. Geertz's attorneys, as an expert\015
consultant on Scientology Tech matters. I would know from the type of\015
advice and guidance they have sought from me whether they intended to\015
inquire about the "religious" or "ecclesiastical" uses of the Tech as\015
opposed to the secular use of the Tech. Their inquiries have been limited\015
to secular uses of the Tech. Why should they ask these people about\015
Scientology's confidential upper level materials? There would be no point\015
in bringing up those materials. For the Scientologists to assert a concern\015
over this is simply another example of their **assuming that others will use\015
their own harassing tactics**. In fact, I advised Dr. Geertz's attorneys to\015
c' pose the Scientology celebrities about the lack of corporate boundaries\015
in Scientology. Miscavige, COB RTC, insists upon treating all the\015
celebrities with kid gloves and personally oversees their progress in\015
Scientology, sending RTC, Cmo Int or Gold specialists to take care of\015
their needs regardless of any supposed corporate structure.\015
\015

55. What is astonishing to me is the incredible arrogance of CSI in\015
accusing Dr.\015
Geertz and his counsel of exactly those actions in which CSI regularly\015
engages. It is not the defendants Dr. Geertz and Mr. Fish man who have\015
been conducting an all-out campaign of harassment, assault and\015
vilification; it is CSI that has been doing so. Indeed, the leadership of\015
CSI has no choice but to do so. CSI's leadership is bound to do so by\015
Scientology doctrine. CSI's leadership would be acting heretically or\015
unorthodoxly if it did otherwise. Founder L. Ron Hubbard, whose edicts on\015
these subjects are "sacred scripture" which must be implemented without\015
question or reservation, gave specific instructions to harass and destroy\015
anyone perceived as an enemy of Scientology. There are many, many policy\015
statements by Hubbard, which bind all Scientologists, that go into this.\015
What follows are only a few examples.\015

\015
\015
CSI Is Bound by Its Own scripture to Harass Its Critics\015
\015

56. Hubbard wrote "The Scientologist: A Manual of\015
Dissemination of Material" (attached as Exhibit 3, see p. 157) in 1955. He\015
gave the following instructions for dealing with anyone who sought to\015
compete with orthodox Scientology:\015

"The purpose of the suit is to harass\015
and discourage rather than to win. The\015
law can be used very easily to\015
harass, and enough harassment on somebody\015
who is simply on the thin edge\015
anyway, well knowing that he is not\015
authorized, will generally be\015
sufficient to cause his professional\015
decease. If possible, of course,\015
ruin him utterly." \015

\015

57. Hubbard also urged Scientologists to employ private\015
detectives to investigate anyone who criticized Scientology. He added, in\015
language particularly apropos to this lawsuit: "... we should be very\015
alert to sue for slander at the slightest chance so as to discourage the\015
public press from mentioning Scientology." \015

\015
58. In 1959 Hubbard published\015
the "Manual of Justice" for Scientology (attached as Exhibit 4). This\015
document instructs Scientologists as follows:\015
\015

"People attack Scientology;\015
I never forget it, always even the score....\015
"When we need somebody\015
haunted we investigate....\015
When we investigate we do so noisily always.\015
And usually investigation damps out the trouble\015
even when we discover no really pertinent facts.\015
Remember that by investigation alone we can curb\015
pushes and crush wildcat people and unethical\015
'Dianetics and Scientology' organizations....\015
"Of twenty-one persons found attacking Dianetics and\015
eighteen of them under investigation Scientology\015
were found to be members of the Communist Party or criminals,\015
usually both. The smell of\015
police or private detectives caused them to fly,\015
to close down, to confess. Hire [private detectives] and damn the\015
cost when you need to." \015

\015

\015

59. As author Jon Atack wrote in his well-researched book, A Piece of Blue\015
Sky: Dianetics, Scientology and L. Ron Hubbard Exposed: "A mood was being\015
created in which staff members would become 'deployable agents,' as\015
sociologist Roy Wallis called Hubbard's henchman in his excellent study of\015
Scientology. After all, Hubbard never gave any indication of the\015
possibility that a complaint against him or against Scientology could be\015
justifiable. The tactic of 'noisy investigation' originated in the Manual,\015
and came to mean harassment by defamation. Hubbard certainly did not mind\015
if the defamation was grossly exaggerated, or even a total fabrication. If\015
you throw enough mud, some will stick. The Manual of Justice suggests\015
outright blackmail." (The section of the book which contains this passage\015
is attached as Exhibit 5.) 60. ~~In 1960 Hubbard wrote another policy called~~\015
~~"The Department of Government Affairs" (attached as Exhibit 6), which~~\015
~~stated, in part:~~\015

\015

".... Only attacks resolve threats.\015

\015

\015

". . . Only attacks resolve threats. "In the face of danger from Govts or\015
courts there are only two errors one can make: (a) do nothing and (b)\015
defend. The right things to do with any threat are to (1) Find out if we\015
want to play the offered game or not, (2) If not, derail the offered game\015
with a feint or attack upon the most vulnerable point which can be\015
disclosed in the enemy ranks, (3) Make enough threat or clamor to cause\015
the enemy to quail, (4) Don't try to get any money out of it, (5) Make\015
every attack by us also sell Scientology and (6) Win. . "The goal of the\015
~~department is to bring the government and hostile philosophies or~~\015
~~agencies into a state of complete compliance with the goals of~~\015
Scientology. This is done by high level ability to control, and in its\015
~~absence, by low level ability to control.~~ ~~Invert such agencies.~~\015
Control such agencies. Scientology is the only game on Earth where\015

everybody wins. There is no overt in bringing good order." \015
\015

61. In other words, only activities which promote the expansion of \015
Scientology or which \015
attack and injure its critics are good or ethical by Scientology \015
standards. Any attack or injury to the enemies of Scientology is \015
justified. The end, universal acceptance of the Scientology belief system, \015
justifies the means, attacking or injuring enemies of Scientology, \015
particularly psychiatrists, psychologists and those who have criticized \015
Scientology. \015

\015
62. In another policy statement called "Attacks on \015
Scientology (Additional Policy Letter)" (attached as Exhibit 7) Hubbard \015
instructed Scientologists to: "(1) Spot who is attacking us." "(2) Start \015
~~investigating them promptly for FELONIES or worse using our own~~ \015
~~professionals, not outside agencies.~~ "(3) Double curve our reply by \015
~~saying we welcome an investigation of them.~~" "(4) Start feeding lurid \015
blood, sex, crime actual evidence [sic] on the attackers to the press." \015

\015
\015
63. ~~Each of the documents authored by Hubbard are still part of the~~ \015
~~Scientology doctrine today. In fact, these documents, along with many~~ \015
~~of~~ ~~comprise the heart and soul of the activities of the Office of~~ \015
~~Special Affairs (formerly the Guardian's Office).~~ \015

\015
64. In Scientology, \015
Hubbard's ~~instructions~~ must be followed exactly, with no deviation. These \015
documents and others with similar instructions to harass have been \015
followed in this lawsuit and all the other lawsuits in which Scientology \015
has been involved. \015

\015
65. The Scientologists accuse defendants Dr. Geertz \015
and Mr. Fishman of harassing tactics. Yet it is the Scientologists who \015
are compelled by their most fundamental scriptures to harass perceived \015
enemies of Scientology unceasingly, including judges, defendants, their \015
counsel and the Scientology experts retained in this case. 66. The Hon. \015
Ronald E. Swearinger became a target of Scientology harassment while he \015
was presiding over the case of Larry Wollersheim v. Church of Scientology \015
of California, #C 332 027. In the document attached as Exhibit 8, "Linda" \015
is Linda Hamel, who was In-Charge of the "Mission Find the Crimes" ("MFTC \015
I/C") in OSA, which was run directly by "Marty," who is Marty Rathbun, \015
Inspector General for Ethics in RTC. \015

\015
67. My husband Robert Vaughn Young \015
and I have been harassed and intimidated repeatedly since we became \015
experts in this case. Scientology operatives have stolen our trash. They \015
have slandered us to former associates. They have called us at all hours \015
of the night. High-level OSA operative Kurt Weiland sent my husband a \015
threatening letter. We have been followed and surveilled on several \015
occasions when we were able to spot the person following or surveilling \015
us; we have no idea how much more surveillance we have been subjected to \015
by operatives skilled enough to avoid being spotted. On one occasion we \015
were followed more than 100 miles from our home by a Scientology agent. My \015
husband spotted the agent and stopped our car, at which point the agent \015
pulled in behind us and stopped his car as well. My husband walked over \015
and asked him outright if he was a Scientologist, whereupon he admitted \015
that he was from the high- \015

security Scientology compound in Hemet and that he was following us under \015
orders from Scientology Command. \015

\015

68. These actions are embedded in the doctrine of Scientology. Scientologists have no choice but to adhere to these policies. CSI is Accusing the Defendants of Its Own Criminal Activities

69. L. Ron Hubbard invented a name for someone who accuses others of crimes that he himself has committed. In fact, Hubbard wrote a bulletin about this, which he called "The Criminal Mind." Ironically, Hubbard described himself and his alter ego, the Sea Organization, when he wrote that "THE CRIMINAL ONLY SEES OTHERS AS HE HIMSELF IS."

70. The thinking behind CSI's motion to dismiss is best explained by quoting Hubbard himself: "Apparently they add it up this way: 'If I accuse him of robbing, then it would be assumed by others that I have not robbed a bank.' By loudly voicing a condemnation of a crime, the criminal, with a crooked think, supposes people will now suppose he is above bank robbery and won't suspect him." (A copy of "The Criminal Mind" is attached as Exhibit 9.)

Scientology Doctrine Requires That Psychiatrists and Psychologists Must be Destroyed

71. There is another aspect of the Scientology doctrine which is highly relevant to this case, because Dr. Geertz is a psychologist. Scientologists are taught that psychiatrists and psychologists are the root of all evil in the world. According to Hubbard, psychiatry and psychology are behind a massive conspiracy to destroy Scientology and, with it, man's only hope for salvation. Therefore, all psychiatrists and psychologists, including Dr. Geertz, are Fair Game as far as Scientologists are concerned.

72. Hubbard taught that the world must be protected from psychologists and psychiatrists at all costs. Hubbard wrote many, many scriptures and recorded many lectures in which he vilified, ridiculed, attacked, and blamed all the ills of the world on the mental health profession.

73. The vitriol in Hubbard's attacks has three sources. First, much to Hubbard's surprise and chagrin, the mental health profession did not embrace either Hubbard or Dianetics, Hubbard's "Science of Mental Health." Second, and even more offensive to Hubbard, was the fact that his often dangerous techniques were labeled as quackery. Third, and perhaps most important, Hubbard regarded the mental health profession as a well-established and deeply entrenched competitor for monies which might otherwise flow to him and to Scientology.

74. The following sampling makes clear the degree of Hubbard's loathing and contempt for these professions, and shows that Scientologists will stop at nothing short of total obliteration of these professions.

75. In 1970 Hubbard wrote "The Psychiatrist at Work" (attached as Exhibit 10). he attacks psychiatry as follows: ". . . psychiatry is making insane people. This is why the insanity statistic is soaring and why the crime statistic is on a wild climb.... The psychiatrist has masters. His principal organization, World Federation of Mental Health, and its members, the National Associations of Mental Health, the 'American' Psychiatric Association and the 'American' Psychological Association, are directly connected to Russia. . . It goes without saying that the savagery and

fraud of psychiatry must cease and that auditors must encourage in state\015 and public and through all their connections displacing psychiatric abuses\015 with sane auditing." \015

\015
76. Obviously, psychiatrists and psychologists were\015 evil because their services ~~competed~~ with Scientology auditing. In a 1971\015 document by Hubbard called "Confidential" (attached as Exhibit 11), he\015 wrote: "Policy is that we assign any case or upset in Scientology to past\015 damage and interference with the person by medicine or psychiatry. They\015 were sent to us after medicine or psychiatry had already destroyed them.\015 We cannot be blamed for psychiatric or medical failures. "By continually\015 repeating this, make the AMA, Nats [National Associations of Mental\015 Health], etc. very wary of using our name on these psychiatric and medical\015 failures. Both subjects are guilty and the statement is demonstrably true.\015 Use it often. Make it known to the enemy that this is our policy as a\015 restraint on their fetid imaginations: "Every time you attack us we will\015 disclose more records of your failures.'" \015

\015
77. In another 1971 document of\015 the same date, entitled "It is time we begin to label Psychiatry for what\015 it is, the greatest failure of the Nineteenth Century. Every notorious\015 criminal and defector of the Twentieth Century was in psychiatric hands\015 before the crime. Burgess, McLean, the Texas Tower murderer, Manson and\015 all the rest were psychiatric failures first. Every infamous modern\015 assassin was a psychiatric failure. Psychiatric victims are endless\015 trouble to our society. We are tracing social turmoil, unrest, widespread\015 drug addiction to psychiatry. "We wish to issue a public warning that\015 psychiatry kills. We in Scientology stand ready to help anyone, and help\015 Governments rid themselves of psychiatric crime. There is urgency in this.\015 In too many cases we are asked to repair persons already maimed beyond\015 human tolerance by psychiatric interference and brutality. We blame\015 psychiatric failure for the state of modern society. We will do all we can\015 to help, but Nineteenth Century Psychiatry must go. We have never had a\015 failure or upset that psychiatry had not first ruined." \015

\015
78. In 1980\015 Hubbard wrote "Criminals and Psychiatry" (attached as Exhibit 13). In it\015 Hubbard said: "Almost every modern horror crime was committed by a known\015 criminal who had been in and out of the hands of psychiatrists and\015 psychologists, often many times.... "The most charitable look at this\015 would be that the psychologists and psychiatrists are simply incompetent.\015 B. . other more sinister implications can be drawn.\015

\015
"Developed in the latter part of the nineteenth century, they appeared on\015 the militaristic scene of a rearming and conquest-minded Germany. At that\015 time, the arch criminal Bismarck was laying the groundwork for the\015 slaughters of World War I and World War II. It fitted with the philosophy\015 of militarism that man was an animal and that there was neither soul nor\015 morality standing in the way of the wholesale murder of war. "Up until\015 that time the Church had some influence on the state and possibly some\015 power in restraining bestiality and savagely insane conduct, but small as\015 it might have been, it was incompatible with the unholy ambitions of the\015 militarists. That man was only an animal after all, soulless and entitled\015 to no decency, was bound to be a popular doctrine. That insanity consisted\015 of urges to harm others would have been a very unpopular idea to\015 government heads who had nothing else in mind. . "Spawned by an insanelly\015 militaristic government, psychiatry and psychology find avid support from\015 oppressive and domineering governments.... "The credence and power of\015 psychiatry and psychology are waning. It hit its zenith about 1960; then\015

it seemed their word was law and that they could harm, injure and kill\015 patients without restraint. The appearance of an actual technology of the\015 mind-- Dianetics and Scientology--has played no small part in acting as a\015 restraint. At one time they were well on their way to turning every baby\015 into a future robot for the manipulation of the state and every society\015 into a madhouse of crime and immorality. "The world is turning, things\015 change. And there may come a day when the mad dogs of the world are not\015 given over to the charge of mad dogs. But that will be to the degree that\015 you successfully carry forward Dianetics and Scientology." \015

79. In a 1981\015 document called "Diabetics and Scientology Compared to lath Century\015 Practices" (attached as Exhibit 14), Hubbard wrote: "A comparison between\015 Dianetics and Scientology and psychology and psychiatry is nonsense. "The\015 two lath century subjects, psychology and psychiatry, do not achieve ANY\015 good results. On the contrary they are destructive beyond belief. They\015 make crackpots, sexpots and vegetables when they do not outright kill....\015 "The character of the Governments themselves is established by their\015 tolerance and use of psychology and psychiatry. In no human race of any\015 civilized repute has any law condoned broad mayhem and murder of their\015 populations. Yet under modern governments psychology and psychiatry not\015 orly have carte blanche but also get insistence on their use... "Is this\015 a ivilized world we're living ... "I'm afraid it only will be when\015 Dianetics and Scientology can bring wisdom enough to Man to blunt his\015 furious efforts to do himself in." \015

80. In 1982 Hubbard wrote "The\015 Criminal Mind and the Psychs" (attached as Exhibit 15), which states, in\015 part: "It has often been noted (and routinely reported in the papers)\015 that criminals 'treated' by psychologists and psychiatrists go out and\015 commit crimes. "It could be suspected that these 'practitioners' used\015 pain-drug-hypnosis and other means (under the guise of treatment) to\015 induce the criminal to go out and commit more crimes. And possibly they\015 do.... "So let us look at psychs again -- what they call 'treatment' is a\015 suppression (by shocks, drugs, etc.) of the ability to think. They are not\015 honest enough, these psychs, being just dramatizing psychotics themselves\015 for the most part, to publish the fact that all their 'treatments'\015 (mayhem, really, when it is not murder) make people more stupid.... "The\015 answer to crime is rising IQ. But only the Scientologist can do that." \015

81. In another 1982 document called "The Cause of Crime" (attached as\015 Exhibit 15), Hubbard wrote: ". . . So what IS the cause of crime? The\015 treatment, of course! Electric shocks, behavior modification, abuse of the\015 soul. These are the causes of crime. There would be no criminals at all if\015 the psychs had not begun to oppress beings into vengeance against society.\015 "There's only one remedy for crime--get rid of the psychs! They are\015 causing it!.. "The psychs should not be let to get away with 'treatment'\015 which amounts to criminal acts, mayhem and murder. They are not above the\015 law. In fact, there are no laws at all which protect them, for what sane\015 society would sanction crime against its citizens even as science? They\015 should be handled like any other criminals. They are at best dramatizing\015 psychotics and dangerous, but more dangerous to society at large than the\015 psychotics they keep in their offices and loony bins because they lie and\015 are treacherous. Why the government funds them I do not know. They are the\015 last ones that should be let loose to handle children." \015

82. In another\015 1982 document entitled "Pain and Sex" (attached as Exhibit 17), Hubbard\015 announced that psychiatrists and psychologists (collectively called\015

"psychs") had been behind all of our troubles for millennia (and he also\015 revealed his bizarre view of sexuality): "There are two items in this\015 universe that cause more trouble than many others combined. "One is PAIN.\015 "The other is SEX.... "Despite the false data of Freud, psychologists,\015 psychiatrists and other criminals, they are not native to a being. They\015 are only artificial wavelengths. They have exact frequencies that can be\015 manufactured.... "Destructive creatures who do not want people big or\015 reaching--since they are terrified of punishment due to their\015 crimes--invented pain and sex to shrink people and cut their alertness,\015 knowing Ness, power and reach.... "Pain and sex were INVENTED tools of\015 degradation.... "Combined, pain and sex make up the insane\015 Jack-the-Rippers (who killed only prostitutes) and the whole strange body\015 of sex murder freaks, including Hinckley who shot President Reagan], and\015 the devotees of late night horror movies. Under the false data of the\015 psychs (who have been on the track a long time and are the sole cause of\015 decline in this universe) both pain and sex are gaining ground in this\015 society and, coupled with robbery (which is a hooded companion of both),\015 may very soon make the land a true jungle of crime . "Go into any asylum\015 or a prison and look at the increasing institutional population and know\015 what you are looking at. In the main, these are pain and sex addicts,\015 decadent and degraded and no longer capable. They were sent on that route\015 down through the ages by the psychs and here they are still in the psych's\015 h ds! And do they get well or go straight? Oh no. Whether in prisons or\015 insane asylums, they just get worse. And the psychs in both places rub\015 their bloodied hands as they turn their products loose again upon the\015 remaining population! It's no accident. And the stocks-in-trade of psychs\015 are PAIN and SEX." \015

\015
83. There are many, many more documents and tapes\015 which comprise Scientology doctrine about the evils of psychiatry and\015 psychology. As far as the Scientologists are concerned, the world would be\015 much better off if all the psychiatrists and psychologists were to\015 disappear, leaving Scientology to move into the field of mental health and\015 take it over. The Scientologists actually believe that this would be the\015 best thing that could happen to humankind.\015

\015
84. Furthermore, as far as the\015 Scientologists are concerned, anyone who would subject himself voluntarily\015 to years of hypnosis, as Mr. Fish man did, is already so far gone that\015 there is really nothing that can help him. Orthodox Scientology holds that\015 a person as damaged by psychology as Scientologists believe Mr. Fish man\015 t be might as well drop his current body, pick up another body and start\015 over again.\015

\015
85. So these two people, Dr. Geertz and Mr. Fish man, are so\015 degraded by choice of profession and decision to seek help from a\015 conventional mental health professional that each of them is infinitely\015 expendable in the eyes of Scientology. See Exhibit 2 for an example of the\015 kind of treatment a psychiatrist who publicly criticizes Scientology can\015 expect from a Scientologist. Fish man's Experience in Scientology Drove\015 Him to a Psychotic Break.\015

\015
86. I have read Steven Fish man's book, The\015 Lonesome Squirrel, and I have reviewed his testimony up to his sentencing.\015 I have viewed a 1981 videotape of Fishman under hypnosis by Dr. Uwe\015 Geertz, and I have viewed a 1989 videotape of Fishman being interviewed by\015 his attorney Mark Nurik and Dr. Richard Ofshe in Fish man's home in\015 Florida. Based on the review of these materials and my knowledge and\015 experience in Scientology, I do\015

\015

I do not believe there is any doubt that Steven Fishman was driven to a\015 psychotic break (known in Scientology as "Type 3 PTS," a term which I\015 will explain below) by Scientologists, either deliberately or through\015 greed and gross negligence of his welfare.\015

\015
87. It is utterly forbidden\015 for anyone with a serious psychiatric background, including an extensive\015 history of hypnosis such as Fishman had, to be allowed to have any\015 Scientology processing at all. Attached hereto as Exhibit 19 is a copy of\015 Hubbard Commincation policy letter entitled "Illegal Pus, Acceptance of\015 High Crime PL." I have been advised by Mr. Berry that it was well known\015 by Scientology operatives that Fishman was not eligible for processing\015 because of his history of therapy with Dr. Uwe Geertz; yet he was induced\015 to buy more than \$100,000 worth of Scientology books, written materials,\015 prints and E-Meters, clearly being led to believe that he would be\015 welcomed into the privileged circle of dedicated Scientologists.\015

\015
88. It\015 is highly significant that he was induced to purchase three E-meters\015 (electro-psychometers), the device used in Scientology auditing. E-meters\015 are not used for anything else but auditing, and they are not supposed to\015 be sold to anyone without proof that they are in training as an auditor.\015
\.5
\015

89. **But in the Scientology world there is a thing called statistics, and\015 Fishman was an unsuspecting victim of this system. Every single staff\015 member in a Scientology organization has a statistic which measures his or\015 her production. These statistics are reported every Thursday to\015 International Management in CSI and RTC. For Scientology staff members,\015 their lives virtually revolve around making sure their statistics are\015 rising every week. Many things depend upon this. If their stats are down\015 they may not be paid that week. They may not be allowed to spend any time\015 with their spouse or children. They may not be allowed any time off at\015 all, and since they already work as much as 14 to 18 hours a day or more,\015 one day or even half a day off becomes very important, even if it is only\015 enough time to do laundry. If their stats continue to go down over a\015 period of time, they risk being assigned to the Rehabilitation Project\015 Force or "RPF," which is a Scientology prison camp. Needless to say,\015 people can become quite desperate under these circumstances, ~~and~~ they will\015 do just about anything to get their statistics up.\015**
\015

90. Nowhere in\015 Scientology is the push for statistics more frenzied than in the\015 departments responsible for bringing money into the organization.\015 Unfortunately Fishman appears to have been the unwitting victim of a\015 feeding frenzy which involved at least nine different Scientology\015 corporations. These people discovered that Fishman had money and that he\015 was willing to give it to Scientology. They took his money even though\015 they knew he would never be able to receive any benefit from Scientology\015 auditing, even though they knew he could harm himself with the materials\015 they were selling him, particularly because they also sold him E-Meters.\015 Indeed, it is clear that Fishman was overwhelmed by the Scientology\015 materials he was given, to the point of an actual psychotic break.\015
\015

91. To understand how this could have occurred it is necessary to explain\015 briefly\015 how Scientology processing works. In essence, the theory behind auditing\015 is that by confronting painful incidents in the past one can free up\015 mental energy that has been locked up in these painful memories. L. Ron\015 Hubbard created many auditing processes which are supposed to help an\015

individual achieve greater sanity. But he made it clear that the processes\015 must be done in a precise way with no deviation. There are severe\015 penalties for anyone who deviates from the standard procedures. Hubbard\015 made it clear that it can be very harmful psychologically and even\015 physically to deviate from these procedures.\015

\015

92. Certain situations can\015 cause a person to have trouble in auditing. The most serious thing that\015 can hinder a person's progress up the "Bridge to Total Freedom" (as the\015 exact series of auditing processes is known) is becoming a Potential\015 Trouble Source, or PTS. A PTS is someone who is being suppressed in some\015 way by another person or entity.\015

\015

93. There are different types of\015 PTSness. Some of these are listed in an October 27, 1964, policy by\015 Hubbard known as "Policies on Physical Healing, Insanity and Troublesome\015 Sources." Attached hereto as Exhibit 20 is a copy of Hubbara\015 Communications Office Policy letter entitled "Policies on Physical\015 Healing, Insanity and Troublesome Sources". Ten types of PTSness are\015 listed in this policy letter, each one of which has to do with types of\015 people who have caused Scientology "considerable trouble." They include\015 people who have sued the church, newspaper reporters, family members who\015 are hostile to Scientology, etc. They are listed as Type A through Type\015 J, thus the policy has been nicknamed the "A to J policy." When someone is\015 labelled as being any of these types of PTS, he or she is barred from\015 getting any Scientology processing (auditing) or training, because people\015 who fall into these categories have historically caused trouble for the\015 organization, either by bringing legal action against it or by giving\015 negative information to the press.\015

\015

94. Steve Fishman was labelled Type A,\015 which is "persons intimately connected with persons (such as marital or\015 familial ties) of known antagonism to mental or spiritual treatment or\015 Scientology." He was also labelled Type C, which is "persons who have ever\015 threatened to sue or embarrass or attack or who have publicly attacked\015 Scientology or been a party to an attack and all their immediate families\015 should never be accepted for processing". Fish man was labelled Type C\015 because he had "paid a large amount of money for a set of Hubbard's taped\015 lectures which he had never received, and he had threatened to sue CSI\015 after trying for months to get his money back. (In Scientology one is\015 never supposed to step outside of the Scientology "justice system"; anyone\015 who does so, such as by filing a police complaint or a civil suit, is\015 immediately disqualified for Scientology services.)\015

\015

95. Furthermore,\015 because of his background of hypnosis, Fishman could never be eligible for\015 Scientology services.\015

\015

96. Despite the fact that he was declared PTS A and\015 C, and that it was known he had an extensive history of hypnosis by a\015 psychologist, thereby barring him permanently from Scientology auditing\015 and training, Fishman was sold over \$000,000 of Scientology materials,\015 including a huge collection of tape recorded lectures by Hubbard (which\015 are not supposed to be listened to until one reaches a certain level of\015 Scientology training), packs of material that are only supposed to be seen\015 by people in certain staff positions, and, what is most shocking, three\015 E-meters, one of which was specifically designed for use by auditors on\015 the confidential upper levels of auditing. It is specifically designed\015 for use in solo auditing, which is auditing of oneself. It is clear from\015 his videotaped interview that this is precisely what Fishman used it for.\015

\015

\015

97. This created an explosive situation, one which clearly could lead to a\015 psychotic break in Fish man. Even as recently as September 1993, Ray\015 Mithoff, Senior Case Spervisor International, the most senior Scientology\015 technical expert in the world, supervised the auditing of a person in\015 England who had had a psychotic break as a result of her experiences with\015 Scientology. A copy of Scientology's report on this incident is attached\015 hereto as Exhibit 21. This person had a psychiatric history, and the\015 mixing of psychiatric techniques with those of Scientology had caused the\015 psychotic episode. So it was obviously known that Fishman risked a Type 3\015 psychotic break if he were allowed training or auditing, yet he was sold\015 thousands of dollars worth of materials anyway, including an E-meter with\015 a solo auditing capacity permitting him to self audit. Thus, either\015 intentionally or out of greed and negligence, Scientology created a\015 situation in which Fishman would almost certainly suffer a psychotic break\015 and become a Type 3 PTS, as explained below.\015

\015

98. The types of PTSness\015 described earlier, Types A through J, relate to different types of threat\015 a person can pose to Scientology. There are also three types of PTSness,\015 known as Type 1, Type 2 and Type 3, which relate to a person's own state\015 of mind and physical health. A person will manifest PTSness through a\015 range of conditions, all the way from a minor cold to a more serious\015 illness (all illness is a sign of PTSness) to full-blown insanity. All\015 PTSness is the result of being connected to one or more suppressive\015 people, suppression being defined as "a harmful intention or action\015 against which one cannot fight back." A copy of a Hubbard Communications\015 Office Bulletin entitled "Seach and Discovery" and describing these PTS\015 types is attached hereto as Exhibit 22.\015

\015

99. Type 1 PTS means that the\015 suppressive person is actively suppressing the person in present time. To\015 handle this a person is interviewed by someone who helps them spot who is\015 suppressing them, whereupon the illness (a cold or whatever) is supposed\015 to vanish.\015

\015

100. Type 2 PTS means that the person was connected to the\015 suppressive person earlier, either in this lifetime or an earlier lifetime\015 (it might have been 150 years ago, or 76 trillion years ago - whatever the\015 person thinks). Someone in present time reminds the person of the actual\015 suppressive person, and this is making the person sick. Curing Type 2\015 PTSness requires extensive auditing, usually on the PTS Rundown.\015

\015

101. Type 3 PTS is the Scientology term for a full blown psychotic\015 episode. It\015 was my experience in Scientology that when a person has a psychotic break\015 they lose touch with the real world and begin to hallucinate or imagine\015 conversations, events,\015 people, and whole scenarios. Even after they recover they are\015 never sure what part of the experience was real and what they\015 imagined\015

\015

\015

(Even after they recover they are) never sure what part of the experience\015 was real and what they imagined.\015

\015

102. The subject of Type 3 PTS cases is one of the dark secrets of\015 Scientology. No one is supposed to talk about it outside of Scientology,\015 and it is treated with utmost security when someone becomes Type 3 PTS.\015

The reason for this is obvious: people are not supposed to be driven insane by Scientology, so it would be a public relations nightmare to try to explain it. But more importantly, the treatment of people who have psychotic breaks in Scientology is a clear abuse of the mental health laws, and if such treatment were brought to the attention of mental health officials there is little doubt that Scientology would be subjected to public scrutiny for its practices in this area.

103. A number of things can trigger a psychotic break, or cause a person to "go Type 3," as they say in Scientology. In his Health, first book, Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Hubbard's term for "mental voices" was "demon circuits." Later he made it clear that what is actually occurring when someone has a psychotic break or "goes Type 3" is that all of his body thetans or BTs have become upset and are all talking to him and through him at once.

104. In Fish man's case, it is unclear whether he was driven to this state of mind purely through fraudulent irresponsibility and negligence, or whether it was done more deliberately, as described in the following Hubbard lectures.

105. In a number of taped lectures Hubbard said that a person could be driven insane through the deliberate application of what he called Black Diabetics. This is his term for a method in which the normally therapeutic methods of Dianetics and Scientology are reversed and the person is deliberately driven mad.

106. In a September 17, 1951, tape called "Some Notes on Black Dianetics," Hubbard stated: "A person can drive himself quite mad with Dianetics without any trouble. What you have concentrated on in your study of Dianetics has been the process of making people well. That is your emphasis line. But don't think for a moment that that is any more than half of it. There is as much data on how to make people insane, uncomfortable, sick or dead as there is on how to make them well." A copy of the transcript of this taped lecture is attached hereto as Exhibit 23.

107. It is possible that such techniques were used on Fishman, first to induce him to break the law for Scientology and then to try to get him to commit suicide, leaving a note absolving the church of all responsibility. Having failed to do this, church operatives could have deliberately driven him to the point of a psychotic break.

108. Hubbard explained how to do it in the following passage from "Some Notes on Black Dianetics": "With Black Dianetics, you could tailor make any kind of insanity you wanted to. The person might not manifest this the next day, maybe not the next week or maybe not for thirty days. Maybe three months later he is walking down the street and feeling a little bit tired when somebody honks an auto horn just right or something of the sort, and all of a sudden he goes crazy, and there he is - insane!"

109. In that same lecture Hubbard provided a blueprint for getting someone incarcerated, just as Fishman was, without anyone ever finding out that the person was set up: "We find that nobody can protest an implanted engram [meaning a hypnotic command given to a person such as was portrayed in "The Manchurian Candidate"] except the person into whom it has been implanted. He is the only one who can protest this. He is the only one who can sign

out a warrant. Even if he goes insane, nobody can sign out a warrant. So\015 he could say, 'Well, it was Bill and I know it was Bill and I saw Bill and\015 Bill has taunted me with it since,' and so forth, but if he has been\015 pronounced insane... he has lost his civil rights and he can't issue a\015 warrant. In other words, this is legal murder, legal punishment and so\015 forth. Because the law does not know anything about this, no laws exist to\015 prevent it or inhibit it."\015

\015
110. In another tape called "The Complete\015 Auditor, Part I," delivered on June 28, 1951, Hubbard said: "Any one of\015 us could take a human being and, with malice aforethought, drive him\015 stark, staring crazy with greater efficiency than even psychiatry does.\015 What would you do to him? You would just reverse all the things that you\015 know would help him: ... slug him with some drugs, hit him in the face,\015 take a hypodermic needle to him so that you give him very painful but\015 unobservable somatic.... Then when he comes out of it say this had never\015 happened to him, feed all the content back to him again by telling him\015 about other people's engrams or even his own, convince him that he does\015 not really know what his reality is and convince him that you are his\015 friend. A person can't take this; he would spin. That would be an\015 efficient job, but that could be done on a person who was pretty doggone\015 sane! n A copy of the transcript of this taped lecture is attached hereto\015 a. Exhibit 24.\015

\015
111. In still another tape, called "Outline of Therapy,"\015 Hubbard stated: "Out of Scientology you could formulate a very fine type\015 of thought warfare. Works much better than an atom bomb. An atom bomb just\015 kills people, but you could take thought warfare and you could enslave\015 them utterly. You could make complete slaves out of them." copy of the\015 transcript of this taped lecture is attached hereto as Exhibit 25.\015

\015
112. All of these instructions just quoted are part of the Scientology\015 "scriptures" Every word Hubbard ever uttered is considered to be sacred\015 doctrine, and Hubbard's instructions are taken quite literally by\015 Scientologists. It would be entirely possible for Scientology operatives\015 to take these instructions from Hubbard and use them to manipulate Fishman\015 for their own ends.\015

\015
113. Hubbard himself ordered that "reverse processes"\015 (or Black Dianetics) be run on people he felt were particularly dangerous\015 to Scientology. In a 1968 issue he declared several people fair game\015 (meaning they could be lied to, tricked or destroyed), and instructed that\015 they be run on reverse processes if they ever came into an org.\015 Additionally, he ordered that "Any Sea Org member contacting any of them\015 is to use Auditing Process R2-45." This was a reference to the use of a\015 45 semi-automatic pistol. Hubbard defined R2-4s as a very fast way of\015 getting someone exterior to their body. (See Exhibit 26.) A copy of this\015 declare is attached hereto as Exhibit 27 (see item 7). Hubbard ode it\015 clear that he did not take suicide seriously in a taped lecture called\015 "Create and Confront," given on January 3, 1960, as part of the "State of\015 Man" lecture series. See Exhibit 28 for a transcript of "Create and\015 Confront," particularly pages 93 and 94.\015

\015
114. Even if no one\015 deliberately set out to drive Fishman psychotic, selling him materials\015 that would completely overwhelm him with incomprehensible information and\015 then putting an E-meter in h,s hands was nothing short of criminal\015 negligence. There is little doubt that Fishman used his E-meters to\015 "audit" himself, an action that could easily drive him into a psychotic\015 break.\015

\015

115. In the tape "Some Notes on Black Dianetics," Hubbard himself\015 described the dangers of self-auditing: "...in Dianetics you are playing\015 around with highly explosive material. I would say that a person using\015 Dianetics in certain ways might much more happily juggle two or three hand\015 grenades with their pins pulled. For instance, take some of these people\015 who run around self-auditing: why don't they just go get a gun? That is\015 much simpler and quicker."\015

\015

116. When I was in Scientology I was assigned\015 to keep watch over a young girl in her early twenties who became Type 3\015 PTS after being forced to sever all communication with her family, because\015 they were upset about her involvement in Scientology. This incident\015 occurred in Hemet, California, at the high-security international\015 headquarters of Scientology.\015

\015

117. One day this girl approached me and\015 began to babble, making no sense at all. Recognizing the symptoms of\015 someone who was going Type 3, I immediately alerted one of the security\015 guards so that she could be put under watch. Sure enough, within an hour\015 she was in a full blown psychotic break. She did not know who she was or\015 where she was and she began to get violent. She lost touch completely\015 with the real world and began to hallucinate, imagining conversations,\015 events, people, and whole scenarios.\015

\015

118. L. Ron Hubbard wrote a series\015 of issues detailing what to do when someone "goes Type .3" These issues\015 comprise what is called the Introspection Rundown, a rundown being a\015 series of specific actions to take to achieve a specific result in\015 Scientology processing. Hubbard felt that the Introspection Rundown was a\015 major breakthrough in the handling of psychosis, and that people in mental\015 institutions could be cured by following these steps. A copy of the\015 Introspection Rundown is attached hereto as Exhibit 29.\015

\015

\015

119. The first step is to isolate the person completely from everyone\015 except the people assigned to watch over the person. This is called\015 "Isolation Watch." I was assigned to watch this girl, so I studied the\015 issues to ensure I would handle her correctly. We were not to say a word\015 around her. She was to have complete silence to allow her to calm down (to\015 allow her body thetans to go back to sleep, although she could not be told\015 about this, since she was not up to that level in her processing). This\015 went on for many days as she was in a serious psychotic incident. None of\015 the people assigned to watch her had any formal training in dealing with\015 psychosis.\015

\015

120. She had no idea who she was. One moment she would think\015 she was a butterfly; the next minute she would think she was Hubbard's\015 daughter, Diana Hubbard. Then she would think she was a dog, and she would\015 bark and growl. We had to be very careful to watch her so that she would\015 not try to kill herself, and we also had to be sure she did not get\015 violent and hurt us or become destructive of property.\015

\015

121. She was never\015 referred to any mental health practitioner, because Scientologists believe\015 that all psychiatrists and psychotherapists are completely evil. Hubbard\015 preached the evils of psychiatry so thoroughly that no one in Scientology\015 would ever consider letting a mental health practitioner examine anyone,\015 even someone who is in the middle of a psychotic episode. See several\015 examples of Hubbard's writings on psychiatry attached hereto as Exhibit\015

30. This girl was not even given anything to calm her down except a mixture of calcium and magnesium which was supposed to relax her and let her sleep. It did not have that effect; this girl could hardly sleep at all and soon became exhausted, which simply compounded the problem.

122. After several weeks of this, the girl finally came out of the psychotic episode and was immediately sent back to her family to avoid a negative public relations situation or, possibly, a lawsuit.

123. A more serious incident occurred when a staff member with extremely confidential knowledge of the legal and corporate maneuverings of Scientology became Type 3 PTS. Her name was Cat Morrow and she had been part of a project called MCSS, for Mission Corporate Category Sort-out that was supposed to create a corporate structure to protect Hubbard from civil or criminal action. Cat had information about inurement to Hubbard and about conspiracy within the church to cover it up that would be disastrous if it were ever leaked. So when she had a psychotic break it was of the utmost importance that the situation be kept quiet.

124. Cat was taken to the home of a wealthy Scientologist outside of Los Angeles. The house was surrounded with woods and there were no other houses in sight. There Cat was kept under 24 hour watch, known as "Isolation Watch" because the person is isolated from everyone except those on the "watch." Although I was not assigned to watch her, I was told that Cat became extremely violent on several occasions, that she tried to jump through a plate glass window, that she repeatedly said she wanted to kill herself, and that she had no idea who she was or what she was doing. This went on for several months.

125. I was told that when Cat came out of the psychotic break she was audited on the Introspection Rundown. This is a series of questions and procedures designed to get the person to stop introspecting, based on Hubbard's belief that this would cure the psychosis. On someone who is OTT, as Cat was, the Introspection Rundown is audited on the body thetans that have gone out of control and caused the psychotic break. The theory is that once these body thetans are disengaged from the person's body, the person will be able to get back in control of his or her own mind again.

126. Maggie Butterworth, former OSA operative David Butterworth's wife, was usually assigned to supervise any Scientologist in Los Angeles that had a psychotic break, and I believe that she was in charge of Cat Morrow, in close liaison with Sandi Wilhere, a highly trained case supervisor in CSI who used to be one of the most senior technical experts in Scientology (Miscavige reportedly demoted her to kitchen maid recently).

127. Cat Morrow's case was particularly sensitive not only because of the information that Cat had about the church's legal affairs but also because she was married to Jim Morrow, one of the key people involved in dealing with the IRS. Cat's psychosis could not be allowed to compromise Jim's position, so her situation required the highest security. Normally a staff member who goes Type 3 is routed off staff or sent to the RPF after coming out of the psychotic episode, but because Cat had dealt with such sensitive material she was quietly reassigned to an unimportant department where people could keep an eye on her and make sure she remained loyal to Scientology.

128. A woman named Dorothy Geary was driven into a psychotic episode under circumstances very similar to Steven Fishman's in that she

and her husband were coerced into giving Scientology a tremendous amount\015 of money for services they would never receive. Her husband Robert, a\015 dentist in Ohio, attended a seminar given by Sterling Management Systems,\015 which he later discovered was a front for Scientology. Robert and Dorothy\015 were both coerced into buying Scientology training and processing after a\015 Scientology "chaplain" orchestrated a breach between them which threatened\015 their marriage. Dorothy was then coerced into going to San Francisco for\015 processing, while her husband flew back to Ohio to continue his dental\015 practice.\015

\015
129. While Dorothy was in San Francisco she was induced to buy\015 nearly \$100,000 worth of Scientology materials and services. She was so\015 overwhelmed from the processing she received and the "hard sell" she\015 experienced at the hands of Scientology salesmen that after approximately\015 one month she had a psychotic break. She did not know where she was and\015 was completely out of her mind. Her husband helped her to get home, but\015 then two Scientologists came to live at the Gears' house to try to bring\015 Dorothy out of the psychotic episode. However, the only "treatment" they\015 provided consisted of taking Dorothy for long walks.\015

\015
130. Finally they\015 convinced Robert that Dorothy needed to fly back to San Francisco. Upon\015 a living in San Francisco, Dorothy was taken to a "mountain retreat,"\015 where no one else would see what was taking place. Dorothy was kept there\015 for two weeks, while her husband had no idea where she was.\015 Scientologists were trying to induce Robert to buy more auditing while\015 Dorothy was held in San Francisco.\015

\015
131. Dorothy had been induced to buy\015 boxes and boxes of Scientology books and materials, all of which had been\015 shipped to their home in Ohio after she paid for them with credit cards.\015 When Robert opened the boxes and read some of the more advanced\015 Scientology materials, he realized what his wife had been subjected to and\015 called his family doctor for advice. His doctor gave a probable diagnosis\015 of an acute psychotic episode caused by trauma.\015

\015
132. By the time the\015 Gears' attorney helped them both to disentangle themselves, they had given\015 Scientology close to \$180,000. As Robert Geary described it, "This was\015 money we obviously could not afford to spend and without extreme undue\015 influence there is absolutely no way we would have ever spent such sums. I\015 have read a considerable amount about mind control and now realize that my\015 wife and I were under mind control." A copy of the declaration of Robert\015 Geary D.D.S. executea September 5, 1993 is attached hereto as Exhibit 31.\015

\015
133. There are certain people within the Church of Scientology,\015 particularly RTC and CSI, who have knowledge of many other cases of\015 Scientologists having psychotic, Type 3 PTS episodes. These people include\015 the following: Ray Mithoff, whose title was Inspector General for\015 Technology in RTC when I left in 1989, although I have been told that he\015 now has the title of Senior Case Supervisor International in CSI; Gelda\015 Mithoff, a highly trained auditor who has dealt directly with or\015 supervised number of "Type 3 handling"; Greg Wilhere, whose title was\015 Inspector General in RTC in 1989 and who is a highly trained auditor;\015 Sandi Wilhere, a highly trained auditor and case supervisor in CSI who at\015 last report had been demoted to cook in the communal kitchen at Hemet;\015 and, of course, Miscavige, who supervises virtually every aspect of\015 Scientology, particularly anything that might threaten the public image of\015 the church, such as Scientologists who have Type 3 psychotic breaks.\015

\015

134. The above-named individuals would be able to provide full details of the symptoms and manifestations of Type 3 PTSness and would be able to verify that Steven Fishman would never have qualified for Scientology processing so should never have been allowed access to Scientology materials or E-meters, certainly not a solo meter. They can also verify that all of the individuals who sold these materials to Fishman did so despite the fact that Fishman had already been declared ineligible for Scientology processing. The only question that remains to be answered is whether Fishman was driven to a psychotic break deliberately, or whether it was done simply out of greed and blatant disregard for his well-being.

CSI's Real Motive in Filing for Dismissal Was To Protect Its Managing Agents

135. CSI claims to be concerned about allowing several Scientology celebrities to be deposed. CSI says it does not want these people to be harassed by Dr. Geertz's attorneys. In truth, if it served CSI's purposes to have these celebrities deposed CSI would order the deponents to appear and not think twice about it. This much-touted concern for the celebrities is purely show. What CSI is actually worried about is that the tables have been turned on it in this case. The Scientologists can dish it out, but they cannot take it. They have finally met their match. Dr. Geertz's attorneys Graham Berry and Gordon Calhoun have educated themselves, with the help of several former Scientologists, about how this organization really operates, and they are not letting CSI get away with its usual harassment and intimidation tactics. This is the real reason CSI filed for dismissal.

136. Dr. Geertz's attorneys have parted the flimsy curtain of a corporate veil honored almost always in breach to reveal the true structure of authority in Scientology, the Sea Organization, and the people who really run Scientology, starting with Miscavige, the managing agent of the entire organization, and his key lieutenants, including Norman Starkey, Greg Wilhere, Mark Yager, Marty Rathbun and Ray Mithoff. Under Miscavige's direction, this organization has systematically violated the civil and human rights of its members, secure in the knowledge that because it calls Scientology a religion, it is protected by the First Amendment. Suddenly CSI is confronted by counsel assisted by experts who are fully aware that the Tech is applied both secularly and ecclesiastically. The veil provided by the misuse of First Amendment claims that every action by a Scientologist is religious and beyond scrutiny by the civil justice system has been parted. CSI's management has been delivered a clear and compelling message. CSI's management knew it could not maintain its facade of respectability and religiosity if CSI allowed this case to continue. That is why CSI moved to dismiss it on the eve of the trial.

religiosity if CSI allowed this case to continue. That is why CSI moved to dismiss it on the eve of trial.

137. Miscavige has filed a declaration in which he denies being the managing agent of the Scientology empire. He words his denial carefully, using the language of the corporate shell he created to shield his true position from the Courts. But the truth is that he does run it, either directly or via his key lieutenants. This is common knowledge within the upper echelons of the Sea Organization. Miscavige's position of power (and the power of his lieutenants) in Scientology is what was being protected by the filing of CSI's motion to dismiss. Therefore, the truth about Miscavige and the henchmen who carry out his

orders bears telling.\015

\015

Miscavige is the managing Agent of Plaintiff CSI\015

\015

\015

138. As stated earlier, I was a Scientologist for nearly 15 years, from\015 January 1975 until July 1989. I was in the GO and its successor (a name\015 change only), OSA, for most of that time. I also worked in another part of\015 Scientology called Author Services, Inc. ("ASI"). I was a Sea Organization\015 ("Sea Org") member during my tenure on all of these costs.\015

\015

139. All of\015

the positions I held from 1978 until 1989 enabled me to observe firsthand\015 the line of command and the organizational structure of Scientology. There\015 is no question whatsoever that Miscavige now holds the same position of\015 absolute power over Scientology, cutting across all corporate boundaries,\015 that Hubbard had before he died. Just as Hubbard was the managing agent\015 for the original mother church, CSC, Miscavige is the managing agent for\015 the current mother church, CSI, via his position as Chairman of the Board\015 of the Religious Technology Center ("COB RTC").\015

\015

140. I first became aware\015

o. Miscavige in 1981, when a coup took place within Scientology. ~~Until~~\015 ~~then there had been two arms~~ of Scientology. The Guardian's Office was run\015 by Mary Sue Hubbard and took care of everything external to the\015 organization, such as public relations, government relations, litigation,\015 and anything else that might hinder the expansion of Scientology. ~~The~~\015 ~~other branch~~, the Commodore's Messenger Organization ("COO"), ran\015 Scientology itself under the direct command of Hubbard (known as the\015 Commodore). Reality was directly contrary to Hubbard's repeated claims\015 that he had resigned all management responsibility in 1966. The CMO\015 directed all internal operations via an unincorporated group of highly\015 dedicated Scientologists known as the Sea Org.\015

\015

141. ~~In 1981~~, I was a\015

~~senior executive~~ in the United States Guardian Office ("US GO"). One\015 ~~evening we were informed that the GO was being taken over by the CMO. From~~\015 ~~that time on Miscavige has had complete control over all branches of~~\015 ~~Scientology~~.\015

\015

Miscavige Wields the Power Through a Small Circle of Lieutenants\015

\015

142. Miscavige wields his power through a small circle of\015 trusted Sea Org lieutenants who obey him unquestioningly. Until July 1989\015 when I left, his most senior aides were in RTC and included ~~Greg Wilhere~~,\015 who was the Inspector General ("IG"); ~~Marty Rathbun~~, who was the\015 Inspector General for Ethics ("IG Ethics"); ~~Ray Mithoff~~, who was the\015 Inspector General for Technology ("IG Tech"); and ~~Marc Yager~~, who was the\015 Inspector General for Administration ("IG Admin"). Another top aide was\015 ~~Norman Starkey~~, who was corporately the trustee of Hubbards estate.\015

\015

143. Based on testimony generated in this and other cases with which I am\015 familiar in my capacity as a consultant and expert and conversations with\015 high-ranking Scientologists who have left since I left in 1989, Miscavige\015 has reorganized his command structure and done away with the IG Ethics,\015 Tech and Admin posts. Miscavige has moved Ray Mithoff back to his old\015 position of Senior Case Supervisor International ("Senior C/S Int") in\015 CSI. He has moved Marc Yager back to his old position as Commanding\015 Officer of the Commodore's Messenger Organization International ("CO CMO\015 Int") in CSI. From the most recent decla- rations of Marty Rathbun and\015

Greg Wilhere, it appears that Miscavige has removed both of them from\015 their posts. They are now on the ship, the Freewinds, probably on the\015 Rehabilitation Project Force ("RPF"), which is the Scientology version of\015 a prison camp. For some reason Miscavige wanted both of them out of the\015 country as this case approached trial. This is probably because both\015 Wilhere and Rathbun have committed acts which may be violations of\015 criminal and civil law on Miscavige's orders. Many of the people\015 designated to be trial witnesses by Dr. Geertz's counsel were witnesses to\015 these unlawful transgressions. If Miscavige's lieutenants were to testify,\015 they would have faced exposure to perjury charges. They are also aware of\015 many wrongful acts which run afoul of criminal and civil law of which\015 Miscavige is directly guilty. There is a possibility that Miscavige's\015 lieutenants, when faced with the prospect of personal criminal liability\015 for perjury for false testimony designed to protect Miscavige, would\015 instead abandon their mentor when placed under oath and reveal what they\015 know, particularly if granted immunity.\015

\015
144. Miscavige has other top aides in CSI whom he orders either directly\015 or via the RTC command lines.\015
These CSI aides include the Watchdog Committee ("WDC"), which is a group\015 of Sea Org members who manage all of the different branches of\015 Scientology, both secular and non-secular. **Other top CSI aides include\015 Kurt Weiland, who is the Commanding Officer of the Office of Special\015 Affairs International ("CO OSA Int"); Guillaume Lesevre, who is the\015 Executive Director International ("ED Int"); and Heber Jentzsch, who is a\015 PR front man with the title of President of the Church of Scientology\015 International ("President CSI"). In reality, Heber has no administrative\015 power at all and his duties are solely to deal with media and other PR\015 groups.\015**

\015
145. The authority of the above-named individuals comes solely\015 from Miscavige. Any one of them can vanish overnight. Any one or all of\015 them can be sent to the prison camp known as the RPF if Miscavige even\015 suspects disloyalty. (This is undoubtedly what happened to Wilhere and\015 Rathbun.) Miscavige's authority over RTC, CSI and (via these two\015 corporations) the rest of Scientology, is absolute.\015

\015
146. Since Miscavige\015 took over the Guardian's Office in 1981, he has had virtually total\015 control over the entire Scientology organization, including all branches\015 of Scientology management and extending out to every single person in the\015 world who is a Scientologist. No one can challenge his authority.\015
Miscavige can expel anyone from Scientology literally with a snap of his\015 finger. In fact, "The Sea Organization Expansion News" contains a graphic\015 picture of Miscavige "declaring a former Mission Holder suppressive." (See\015 Exhibit 32.)\015

\015
147. Miscavige derived his power directly from Hubbard, which\015 is why his power was and now is so absolute. Hubbard went into hiding in\015 1976 to avoid the IRS. Several government agencies around the world and in\015 the UPS. and a number of former Scientologists sued Hubbard. Miscavige\015 gradually took over as Hubbard's eyes and ears until finally, by 1981,\015 Hubbard allowed him to take over entirely.\015

\015
Miscavige First Ran Scientology from Author services. Inc.\015

\015
148. In 1981 Miscavige called\015 himself Special Project Operations ("Special Project Ops"). He set up\015 offices in the CMO building across the street from the big blue building\015 in Hollywood. From this position, he ran the entire Scientology\015

operation. He had several people working directly with him in a unit\015 called Special Project, including Norman Starkey, Terri Gamboa, Lyman\015 Spurlock, my husband Robert Vaughn Young, myself, and others. These people\015 ran all the PR, Legal and Intelligence runctions that had previously been\015 run by the Guardian's Office line of command. The primary focus was the\015 Mission All Clear, or the MAC Unit, in the Legal Division of the Guardian\015 Office. The purpose of this unit was to extricate Hubbard from all the\015 lawsuits that had been filed naming him as head of the church. Miscavige\015 was personally charged with extricating Hubbard from pending litigation so\015 Hubbard could come out of hiding.\015

\015
149. Because Miscavige had the direct\015 communication line to Hubbard, he also had authority over all of the\015 internal Scientology Management personnel.\015

\015
Scientology management personnel. All communications from Hubbard came\015 through Miscavige, and all communications to Hubbard went through\015 Miscavige. There were only two other people more senior than Miscavige,\015 Pat and Annie Broker. Their status arose because they were actually with\015 Hubbard. An order from Pat or Annie had as much authority as an order from\015 Hubbard because they were so close to him.\015

\ .5
150. But Pat and Annie were\015 sequestered off at the Creston, California, ranch. Miscavige was at the\015 center of and actually directing Scientology activities. He used his\015 position of high visibility within the Scientology command structure to\015 run Scientology from the moment he became Special Project Ops.\015

\015
151. In May 1982, Miscavige and the rest of the staff of Special Project\015 moved to a suite of offices on Sunset Boulevard and adopted the corporate\015 mantle of ASI.\015

\015
152. Miscavige appointed himself COB of ASI. This title was for\015 consumption by the general public. Miscavige continued to identify himself\015 as Special Project Ops in correspondence with church personnel. Miscavige\015 appointed Terri Gamboa Executive Director of ASI. He gave Norman Starkey\015 the title Legal Affairs Director. Lyman Spurlock became Corporate Affairs\015 Director. Miscavige gave Robert Vaughn Young the title Public Affairs\015 Director, and so on. Miscavige assigned me the job of Organizing Officer\015 of ASI. As such, I was responsible for making sure the staff were doing\015 their jobs properly. If the staff failed in any way, I was charged with\015 correcting them.\015

\015
153. During this time, and from 1981 until Hubbard died\015 in 1986, I observed firsthand Miscavige systematically replacing Hubbard\015 as head of Scientology. Publicly, ASI was promoted as a glitzy Hollywood\015 literary agency dealing exclusively with the works of Hubbard. But behind\015 the scenes, Miscavige was running all of Scientology from the ASI offices.\015

\015
154. As an ASI staff member, I was instructed, and all those who worked in\015 ASI were also instructed, that making large amounts of money for Hubbard\015 was an integral part of running Scientology. Hubbard's written\015 communications to ASI staff revealed that he felt nothing but contempt for\015 his creation, the church of Scientology. He made it clear that he felt\015 perfectly justified in taking as much money out of the church as DM and\015 the other ASI staff could get away with. (Hubbard dictated all of his\015 communications and the dictation was then transcribed and distributed by\015 Miscavige. Both the dictation tapes and the dispatches still exist,\015 although CSI will undoubtedly deny it.) Hubbard made it very clear that\015

Miscavige's success or failure would be based on how much money he could\015
make for Hubbard, whether it came from church coffers or other sources.\015
\015

155. Accordingly, Miscavige made sure that as much money as possible was\015
taken from church accounts. Fran Harris thought up labels, known in\015
Scientology as "significance," which were attached to huge lump sums which\015
Miscavige then ordered to be transferred from nonprofit church accounts\015
into ASI accounts every week. These labels were designed to conceal from\015
the IRS and other governmental agencies the true nature of the transfers.\015
\015

156. There was never any question that the staff at the non-profit\015
organizations would transfer the money as directed. Each of these\015
organizations and therefore each of the staff members was junior to\015
Miscavige. **If Miscavige ordered it done, it had to be done. If anyone\015
having responsibility over the financial accounts of the junior\015
organizations refused to follow orders from Miscavige he or she was\015
subject to immediate banishment to the RPF.** I was told by my superiors,\015
including Miscavige, that Miscavige was acting as Hubbard's deputy, and\015
that anything Miscavige ordered should be treated as an order directly\015
from Hubbard himself.\015

\ 5
157. The only thing that ever slowed these\015
transactions down was making sure the significance attached to the\015
transfer would appear legitimate to the IRS. Miscavige made Lyman Spurlock\015
responsible for working out the legal details of these transfers. I often\015
had to sit down with Lyman and help him calm down after he had been\015
ordered to legitimize some of Fran Harris's money-making ideas. Lyman told\015
me that he had had many serious disagreements with Fran about the legality\015
of at least some of her schemes. In my experience, when Lyman expressed\015
his doubts to Miscavige, Miscavige always sided with Fran. Miscavige's\015
instructions usually concluded with an order to Lyman to "make it legal."\015
\015

158. Miscavige also assigned Lyman the task of sorting out all of the\015
Scientology corporations so they would be legally defensible in the eyes\015
of the IRS and other governmental agencies. It was at this point that the\015
huge conglomeration known as Church of Scientology of California ("CSC"),\015
the predecessor "mother church," was split up into many different\015
corporations. Lyman worked out the whole shell, including all the\015
relationships between the different echelons.\015
\015

159. Lyman arranged for the\015
Religious Technology Center ("RTC") to have contracts with every single\015
corporation that uses Hubbard and Scientology trademarks and copyrights in\015
any way, including the management organizations, the service\015
organizations, the businesses that use Hubbard's books, and so on. The\015
real purpose of all of these contracts was to have a legal means by which\015
to collect monies from these entities, and to put anyone out of business\015
who refused to tow the line of Scientology orthodoxy as dictated by\015
Hubbard or any of his successors.\015
\015

160. Since Hubbard's death, Miscavige\015
has assumed the power and authority to put out of business any\015
Scientologist who refuses to tow the orthodox Scientology line as he\015
dictates it.\015
\015

161. I worked directly with Miscavige while I was at ASI. I\015
was horrified to discover that the senior-most person in Scientology, who\015

had daily contact with Scientologists and the public, was a ruthless, vicious, megalomaniacal tyrant. I had never worked with Hubbard personally, but I learned from others who had that Hubbard was the same way. I was told that Hubbard was prone to the same petulant tantrums that were daily occurrences with Miscavige.

162. Miscavige's style of management was exemplified by screaming profanities and terrorizing the staff. This is entirely consistent with the Hubbard Tech which features "Ethics Presence. n Senior managers are taught to manage by instilling fear and terror in their subordinates. As the most senior manager, Miscavige had to instill terror in all his subordinates in order to be in compliance with orthodox Scientology management techniques.

163. One day Miscavige gave me an insight into why he acted the way he did. He knew I did not approve of his cursing at the top of his lungs. We were having an executive meeting, and in the middle of a sentence he suddenly turned to me, very seriously, and said, "You think I yell loudly, but you've never heard anyone yell until you've heard LRH [Hubbard]. I'll never be able to scream the way he does. But Stacy, that's the only way to get compliance." This was confirmation that he was acting deliberately and calculatingly in accordance with the dictates of the Hubbard Tech. 164. I realized then that Miscavige was trying to become as much like Hubbard as he could, and that he was preparing to take Hubbard's place when Hubbard died.

165. Anyone who disagreed with Miscavige or challenged his authority in any way was branded by Miscavige as a traitor who was out to destroy Scientology. This was why David Mayo was ousted, along with most of his staff. Many others were thrown out in 1981 and 1982 and replaced with people who would obey Miscavige's orders unquestioningly. Ray Mithoff, who replaced Mayo, is today one of Miscavige's top lieutenants. John Nelson, head of the CMO and director of all the Scientology organizations, was also ousted by Miscavige and replaced by a loyal follower, Marc Yager. Today Yager is another one of Miscavige's top people.

166. Hubbard was still alive when I was at ASI in 1982, and every staff member in ASI was required to report to Hubbard every week on the status of his or her sector of Scientology.

.5
week on the status of his or her sector of Scientology. No one slept from Tuesday to Friday because Miscavige ordered that no one could leave until he had approved their weekly report to Hubbard. Miscavige repeatedly rejected the reports, insisting that they be rewritten until they were perfectly worded to appear that Miscavige had everything fully under control. No one was allowed to send any communication to Hubbard that wasn't edited by Miscavige (which meant that Hubbard effectively did not really know what was going on from 1981 until his death). This grueling schedule left the entire staff in terrible shape physically, and extremely vulnerable to Miscavige's brutal, coercive manipulation.

167. At that time the ASI offices were on the ninth floor of an office building in downtown Hollywood, yet people could hear Miscavige screaming down on the street, a block away. It was disgusting to see how he treated anyone he viewed as not fully "with him."

Miscavige's Treatment of his Staff was Horrific\015
\015

168. Jim Isaacson, for example, was in charge of investing\015 Hubbard's money, and he was expected to show a profit on a weekly basis.\015 Anyone familiar with the investment business knows this is not a realistic\015 expectation, but Jim's job depended upon his showing an increasing profit\015 every week. Predictably, Jim was not doing well at all. He was not eating\015 or sleeping. Miscavige was screaming mercilessly at Jim every day. Jim was\015 near the breaking point.\015

\015
169. One day Miscavige found out that Jim had\015 lost a large amount of money by investing incorrectly in the gold market.\015 Miscavige summoned two of his top lieutenants, Norman Starkey and Terri\015 Gamboa. Miscavige and Starkey literally dragged Jim into the conference\015 room.\015

\015
170. My office was right across the hall so I heard everything that\015 went on. For the next three and a half hours Miscavige screamed\015 profanities and wild, paranoid accusations at Jim, demanding to know who\015 had sent him to destroy Scientology, was he working for the IRS, was he\015 working for the FBI, what other enemy agents were working with him inside\015 Scientology, etc., etc., ad nauseam. I heard Jim repeatedly deny the\015 accusations, and Miscavige's response was to scream at him even more.\015

\015
171. Finally Miscavige threw open the door and stormed into my office. He\015 ordered me to go in and get the information out of Jim and not let him\015 leave until he'd confessed everything. I'd never seen anyone behave like\015 Miscavige before. (As stated above, while I was on this post and later\015 while I was in the RPF, I learned from others that Miscavige's behavior\015 mimicked Hubbard's.)\015

\015
172. Miscavige was very frightening. When he was\015 worked up his conduct was consistent with what I later learned was a\015 psychotic episode. Miscavige appeared to be completely out of control. He\015 screamed profanities at the top of his lungs directly in my face. Others\015 who went past my office kept their eyes averted and walked by as quickly\015 as possible. Finally, he marched down the hall (with Norman and Terri\015 following) and slammed the door of his office.\015

\015
173. When I went into the\015 conference room I found Jim collapsed on the table. His eyes were glazed\015 and he was shaking uncontrollably. Rather than complying with Miscavige's\015 order to continue the interrogation, I did my best to calm Jim down, as he\015 was clearly terrified, and told him to go home and get some sleep. Jim was\015 on the RPF within days.\015

\015
174. Part of Jim's terror arose from the fact\015 that Miscavige had already sent Jim's wife, Joyce, to the RPF for refusing\015 to go along with his brutal treatment of staff. I knew about this because\015 I replaced Joyce. I was dispatched to the RPF shortly thereafter because I\015 objected to the same abuses.\015

\015
175. No one could speak out against\015 Miscavige's terror tactics because there was no way to have a discussion\015 with him on the subject. The RPF filled up with people who tried to stand\015 up to him. He surrounded himself with people who were willing to do\015 whatever he ordered. I tried several times to protest and ended up in more\015 and more trouble as the weeks went on. Finally Miscavige lost his temper\015 at me one night and threw me into my office, locked the door, and screamed\015

at me until finally I felt I would lose my mind if he did not stop. I had\015
not slept for several days, and I snapped.\015

\015

Staff who were Critical of Miscavige Were sent to the RPF\015

\015

176. The next day I didn't go to work,\015

saying I was sick. I was afraid to tell anyone what had happened for fear\015
that Miscavige would separate me from my husband (another common tactic he\015
uses, as did Hubbard, to control people). Unfortunately confided in\015
someone I thought I could trust that Miscavige was brutal, tyrannical\015
bully. That person immediately reported me to Miscavige. That night at\015
four in the morning there was a loud knock on my door. It was the\015
Scientology security police. They took me to the RPF. That is how absolute\015
Miscavige's power is, and how immediate is the punishment for anyone who\015
doesn't completely submit to his authority.\015

\015

177. Miscavige charged me\015

with being an agent who had been sent in to destroy Scientology. He\015
claimed that I was working for Michael Flynn, an attorney who was\015
successfully litigating against Scientology at that time. **He ordered me to**\015
submit to what was known as a "gang-bang sec check. n Two very large,\015
strong men, Andre Tabayoyon and Rick Aznaran, locked me in a room and\015
interrogated me for hours. During the interrogation, they screamed and\015
swore at me. They accused me of all sorts of crimes against Scientology.\015
They demanded that I confess to being an enemy agent.\015

\015

178. Miscavige had\015

also ordered me to do the "Running Program" as part of the requirements\015
for getting off the RPF. This consisted of running around an orange pole\015
for 12 hours a day. I was supposed to do this until I had some sort of\015
realization about what was wrong with me, whereupon, presumably, I would\015
stop being critical of him.\015

\015

179. After one of the gang-bang sec check\015

sessions, I was extremely upset. I was not paying sufficiently careful\015
attention to where I was placing my feet as I ran around the orange pole.\015
I ran straight-legged into a pothole about a foot deep and smashed one of\015
my sacroiliac disks. This put me flat on my back. I was unable to walk. I\015
was under orders from a doctor not to move because he thought there was a\015
danger that I might suffer paralysis from movement before the swelling in\015
the disk subsided. I paid for the doctor myself, since Miscavige had\015
ordered that no one give me any assistance whatsoever and, indeed, I was\015
not paid at all for several months on the RPF.\015

\015

180. Despite my medical\015

condition, diagnosed by a Scientologist doctor, Miscavige issued orders\015
that I be sent to Florida to get me as far away from my husband as\015
possible. Miscavige said he was afraid I would turn my husband against\015
him. A Commodore's Messenger burst into my room one evening and ordered\015
me to pack immediately so that I could catch a flight to Clearwater that\015
night. I was to be transferred to the RPF at the Flag Land Base, another\015
Scientology compound. I protested, she continued to insist that I get up\015
until I was finally able to get her on the phone with the doctor, who told\015
her the church would be responsible if I ended up paralyzed.\015

\015

181. Although Miscavige allowed me to remain in Los Angeles, I was\015
imprisoned,\015

under guard, on the seventh floor of the building, so that I could not\015
escape and reach my husband. We were not allowed to see each other at all\015
for three months, and even our letters to each other were intercepted.\015

Neither of us knew what had happened to the other and it was agonizing for\015 both of us. I was under threat of expulsion and I believed that if I were\015 expelled I would never see my husband again. I was deathly afraid that\015 Miscavige would lie to my husband about me and turn him against me. I\015 finally convinced Miscavige that I was not a threat to him, and my husband\015 and I were allowed to see each other again. Miscavige Rules Via the Sea\015 Organization: There is No Corporate Integrity\015

\015
182. Horror stories like this could be told by any Scientology staff\015 member who has worked in close\015 proximity with Miscavige. The only people who will talk about him,\015 however, are those who have left, because as long as they are inside he\015 virtually holds the power of life and death over them. He can separate\015 them from the spouses, separate them from their children, keep them from\015 sleeping, keep them from eating anything but rice and beans, imprison them\015 for years in the prison camps known as the RPF. Miscavige's power is\015 absolute, and it has nothing to do with corporate boundaries. As did\015 Hubbard before him, he wields his power via the Sea Organization, which is\015 an unincorporated, fiercely dedicated group of Scientologists. It is the\015 Sea Org that actually runs all of Scientology.\015

\015
183. Miscavige simply uses\015 t corporations, as Hubbard did, to manipulate the courts, the IRS and\015 other government agencies. The corporations were only created to fool the\015 outside world, the "wog world," as Sea Org members contemptuously call it.\015 Inside Scientology, the only boundaries are the ones Miscavige chooses to\015 create, just as it was with Hubbard before him, and everyone knows it. In\015 fact, now that Hubbard is dead, what Miscavige wants is senior even to\015 what Hubbard policy says. Miscavige can violate policy and break the law\015 whenever he wants to and no one can stop him. The 1982 Mission Holders'\015 Meeting Illustrates the Emptiness of the Corporate shell\015

\015
\015
184. Miscavige and his RTC and CSI lieutenants can walk into any\015 Scientology organization and order anything they want or shut it down at\015 whim. Nowhere has there been a clearer illustration of the emptiness of\015 Scientology's corporate shell than the infamous Mission Holders' meeting\015 in 1982. A transcript of this meeting is attached as Exhibit 33. Although\015 Miscavige's profanity and many of his and his lieutenants' less elegantly\015 phrased comments have been edited out, several things are still clear.\015

\015
1 .. Miscavige, who at the time was officially COB ASI, was head of\015 Scientology and senior to everyone else there. The other speakers included\015 Lyman Spurlock, Corporate Affairs Director at ASI; Norman Starkey, Legal\015 Affairs Director at ASI; Ray Mithoff, Senior Case Supervisor International\015 in CSI; Marc Yager, CO CMO Int in CSI; Guillaume Lesevre, ED International\015 in CSI; Steve Marlowe, then Inspector General of the Religious Technology\015 Center (he was later sent to the RPF and replaced by Vicki Aznaran, who in\015 turn was busted and replaced by Greg Wilhere, who has since been busted\015 and, apparently, replaced by Miscavige himself, holding the position of\015 Inspector General as well as that of COB RTC); and Wendell Reynolds,\015 international Finance Dictator in CSI (he was later busted and spent\015 several years on the RPF).\015

\015
186. Miscavige, an employee and director of\015 ASI, and his lieutenants, whose employment spanned RTC, ASI and CSI, were\015 speaking directly to a group of people who held the franchise rights to\015 various missions (missions being the lowest organizations on the\015 Scientology totem pole). Yet there was no Scientology leaders, on\015 Miscavige's orders, expelled several mission holders on the spot that day\015

for being unhappy about what they were hearing, destroying their business\015 with a snap of the finger. On Miscavige's orders the mission holders were\015 ordered to pay large sums of money for a promotional campaign for the\015 original Dianetics book, under threat of being investigated for crimes\015 against Scientology if they refused. They were ordered to pay large sums\015 of money for many other "crimes," real or imagined, under threat of losing\015 their business if they refused. The result was hundreds of thousands of\015 dollars paid into CSI and RTC accounts from these missions.\015

\015
187. Hundreds of people, including many mission holders, were expelled\015 from the church\015 during that time. All people who criticized Miscavige or refused to comply\015 with his orders, regardless of status or organizational affiliation,\015 were subject to expulsion. Miscavige quickly made it clear that he could\015 order any Scientologist, anywhere in the world, to do anything he wanted.\015 See Exhibit 32 for a copy of "The Sea Organization Expansion News," "The\015 Sea Org Moves In!" copyrighted by CSI, which includes a photograph of\015 Miscavige expelling a Mission Holder. There is also another photograph\015 which shows Marc Yager, Miscavige, Norman Starkey, Guillaume Leserve and\015 Ray Mithoff, among others, all identified by their Sea Org ranks even\015 though Miscavige and Starkey were ASI (non-church) staff at the time.\015 This is further evidence that these men are managing agents of CSI, which\015 was why Dr. Geertz wanted them deposed in this case.\015

\015
Miscavige Personally Ordered and Oversaw the Portland Crusade\015

\015
188. I was in the Office of\015 Special Affairs United States (OSA US) in Los Angeles in 1985 when a jury\015 awarded Julie Christofferson \$39 million in damages for being harmed by\015 Scientology. We had all expected to win the case. After all, Miscavige and\015 his top aides had been up in Portland running the whole thing directly.\015 How could we lose? There was champagne and a huge, sumptuous buffet\015 waiting for us, as soon as we received word on the victory.\015

\015
189. Instead, we got word that there was a \$39 million decision against\015 the church. It\015 was devastating. Dead silence fell throughout OSA US's offices. For an\015 hour, no one knew what to do. It was the most humiliating defeat\015 Scientology had ever had.\015

\015
190. And then suddenly all the OSA staff were\015 summoned into one of the legal offices. Miscavige and Norman Starkey, who\015 was Legal Affairs Director, ASI, at that time, were on the speaker phone.\015 The decision was an outrage, Miscavige told us. He told us he would not\015 permit it to stand. Every Scientologist from around the world was ordered\015 to Portland, immediately. We were to spread the word by whatever means\015 possible, arrange transportation, raise the money, do whatever we had to\015 do to get the Scientologists there. This was the beginning of what became\015 known as the Portland Crusade.\015

\015
191. The staff of OSA did nothing but run\015 various aspects of the Portland Crusade until the judge finally declared a\015 mistrial several months later. The entire operation was overseen by\015 Miscavige and his top staff. Planes were chartered to fly Scientologists\015 from Europe to Portland; donations were raised to print a special edition\015 of the church publication, FREEDOM, about the "Religious Freedom Crusade"\015 and distribute it door to door to every home in Port land. Miscavige even\015 ordered students to leave their Scientology courses (unheard of in\015 Scientology) to go to Port land.\015

\015

192. The best time to observe how the\015
Scientology command lines really work is during a disaster. The\015
Christofferson loss of 1985 was the biggest disaster Miscavige had ever\015
had to deal with, and all semblance of corporate integrity fell by the\015
wayside in an instant.\015

\015
Miscavige Crossed All Corporations When Hubbard Died\015

\015
193. The corporate structure was completely ignored again when\015
Hubbard died in January 1986. I was ordered to ASI and briefed, along with\015
a roomful of others from OSA US (Church of Scientology Western United\015
States, or "CSWUS"), OSA Int (CSI), CMO International (CSI), Gold (CSI)\015
and elsewhere, by Miscavige on what had happened. Then, although he had no\015
corporate authority over any of these organizations or staff, he went\015
around the room and gave each of us our instructions as to what we must do\015
in the transition to the post-\015

Hubbard era of Scientology.\015

\015

194. When Hubbard died, I was employed by an\015
organization called North Star. This was a non-church corporation I formed\015
to put FREEDOM Magazine, which I edited, at arm's length from the various\015
Churches of Scientology for tax purposes. I created a separate corporation\015
based on the advice of Scientology's lead\015

tax attorney, Chris Cobb, Esq.\015

\015

\015

195. Although North Star was established as a subsidiary corporation of\015
CSI, in reality North Star was supposed to receive its operating\015
instructions from OSA US (CSWUS). We did receive instructions from\015
executives at OSA, but we also received instructions directly from ASI,\015
including Miscavige himself. He assigned us to do a research project for\015
the Hubbard biography. At the time, we were receiving direct orders from\015
both OSA and ASI.\015

\015

196. Miscavige ordered me to write the copy for a\015
eulogy of Hubbard. I worked directly with Norman Starkey and Miscavige to\015
finalize the copy, and Miscavige gave the final approval. Then, under\015
orders from Miscavige, I worked with Jonathan Epstein, a financial banking\015
officer who was part of CSI, to arrange for several hundred thousand\015
dollars to be pulled from various reserve accounts in a number of\015
different corporations. These funds paid for the eulogy to be placed in\015
major newspapers around the country as full-page ads.\015

\015

197. After the ads\015
were placed, Miscavige then ordered me to create a booklet about Hubbard\015
to be used for promotional purposes. Again he ordered Jono Epstein. (CSI)\015
to pull funds from various church corporations to pay for a massive\015
distribution of the booklet. Copies of the booklet were inserted in\015
several major newspapers in major cities. Thousands of copies were mailed\015
out. The cost for this project came to approximately 50 million and was\015
funded by reserve accounts from several church corporations, as ordered by\015
Miscavige.\015

\015

Today Miscavige Has Completely Consolidated his Power\015

\015

198. With Hubbard dead Miscavige moved quickly to consolidate his power. In\015
early 1987 he removed his only remaining challengers, Pat and Annie\015
Broker. He also switched his base of operations from ASI to RTC. It was a\015
bloody coup. Miscavige applied the scorched-earth policy to all who had\015
ever had a kind word for the Brokers. My husband, who had worked with Pat\015

Broeker, was sent to the RPF along with Vicki Aznaran, Greg Ryerson, Jesse\015 Prince, Spike Bush, and many others. Only those who had remained\015 steadfastly loyal to Miscavige were allowed to keep their jobs.\015\015

199. Today, the only people who survive are those who kowtow to Miscavige\015 unreservedly and ~~completely~~. He has truly become Hubbard's successor. He\015 curses like him, screams like him, thinks like him, and rules with a\015 ruthless, iron hand and a contempt for the outside world just the way\015 ~~Hubbard did when he was alive.~~\015

200. Just as Hubbard did, Miscavige has\015 created many corporate layers between him and the courts, the IRS, other\015 governmental agencies and the outside world in general, and he deals them\015 like so many cards when it is convenient. But it is Miscavige who really\015 holds the power, and because he is COB RTC, RTC is the only Scientology\015 entity with any real power.\015

201. See Exhibit 34 for RTC Executive\015 Directive No. 450, dated 6 September 1991, from Miscavige to all\015 Scientologists. The first 22 pages of this document provide a valuable\015 glimpse of the world according to Miscavige, bizarre paranoia and all.\015

15
202. On page 22, Miscavige announces a general amnesty for all\015 Scientologists, meaning that anyone who has gotten into trouble in the\015 past is forgiven and can get back on the "Bridge to Total Freedom. This\015 amnesty cuts across all corporate boundaries. The document behind it,\015 Inspector General Network Bulletin No. 14, is from one of Miscavige's\015 lieutenants, former Inspector General for Ethics RTC Marty Rathbun. This\015 document explains to all Scientologists how to apply the amnesty. It also\015 cuts across all corporate boundaries.\015

203. CSI is only a lackey\015 corporation. The function of the staff members of CSI is to carry out\015 Miscavige's orders. If a CSI staff member refuses to comply with\015 Miscavige's orders he or she is removed from post and sent to the RPF. CSI\015 has no more independent authority than any other church or non-church\015 corporation in the Scientology network. Its authority (indeed, its\015 existence) is solely in the hands of Miscavige. If he decided to rearrange\015 the corporate structure again he could do away with CSI altogether and\015 create an entirely new corporation in its place. This is the extent of his\015 power over the Scientology network, including CSI and RTC.\015

204. There is\015 no one else who can represent Scientology. Everyone else is only speaking\015 in Miscavige's place. He is telling them what to say and what not to say,\015 and if they make a mistake, they will feel his wrath. If they make a big\015 mistake, they will go to the RPF. If they ever told the courts what they\015 really know, Miscavige would have them expelled from Scientology and\015 labelled Fair Game, like many others before them.\015

205. In short, the only\015 person who is in a position to talk about all of the inner workings of the\015 Church of Scientology is Miscavige, because he is the only person who will\015 not be punished for doing so. There is no one above him to punish him. He\015 alone can tell the whole truth. His lieutenants know the truth but can\015 tell what they know only if Miscavige gives them permission to do so.\015

206. Miscavige's key lieutenants are also Managing Agents of CSI\015

\015

206. As COB\015

RTC Miscavige controls Scientology via several key lieutenants who have\015 absolute authority to carry out his orders. Although their official\015 positions may have changed corporately as described above, they still\015 wield the same degree of power. If any of these people have been removed\015 from their positions recently, they can still testify about the power they\015 had before they were removed, and furthermore, they can testify that it\015 was on Miscavige's authority that they were removed. These lieutenants\015 include Greg Wilhere, who held the position of Inspector General RTC;\015 Marty Rathbun, who held the position of Inspector General for Ethics RTC;\015 Ray Mithoff, who held the position of Inspector General for Technology RTC\015 and has apparently since been moved to Senior Case Supervisor\015 International in CSI; and Marc Yager, who held the position of Inspector\015 General for Administration and has apparently since been moved to\015 Commanding Officer Commodore's Messenger Organization International in\015 CSI. Another top aide is Norman Starkey, who is the trustee of Hubbard's\015 estate and the Executive Director of ASI. He is also a troubleshooter for\015 Miscavige. Norman must be obeyed when he is operating under Miscavige's\015 orders.\015

\015

Ray Mithoff is a Managing Agent of CSI\015

\015

207. Senior C/S Int Ray Mithoff is a managing agent of CSI. He has\015 command lines via CSI to all churches, missions and any\015

\015

\032

From news.primenet.com!news.asu.edu!asuvax!cs.utexas.edu!howland.reston.ans.ne
Path: news.primenet.com!news.asu.edu!asuvax!cs.utexas.edu!howland.reston.ans.n
Comments: Gated by NETNEWS@AUVM.AMERICAN.EDU
Newsgroups: alt.religion.scientology
Message-ID: <Pine.3.89.9410131749.A9623-0100000@DGS>
Comment: LRH-L
Originator: lrh-l@cornell.edu
Errors-To: hws1@cornell.edu
Reply-To: alerma <alerma@dgs.dgsys.com>
Sender: lrh-l@cornell.edu
Version: 5.5 -- Copyright (c) 1991/92, Anastasios Kotsikonas
From: alerma <alerma@dgs.dgsys.com>
Subject: Vaughn Young Affidavit (LONG POST)
Date: Thu, 13 Oct 1994 17:37:46 -0400
Lines: 892

221 N. Figueroa Street, Suite 1200
Los Angeles, California 90012
Telephone: (213) 250-1800

Attorneys for Defendant
UWE GEERTZ, PH.D.
UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT

CENTRAL DISTRICT OF CALIFORNIA
CHURCH OF SCIENTOLOGY
INTERNATIONAL, a California
non-profit religious
organization,

Plaintiff,

vs .

STEVEN FISHMAN AND UWE GEERTZ,

Defendants.
Case No. CV 91 6426 HLH (Tx)

DECLARATION OF ROBERT VAUGHN
YOUNG IN SUPPORT OF COST BILL
FOR DR. GEERTZ'S MOTION FOR
AWARD OF COSTS, EXPENSES,
ATTORNEY'S FEES AND SANCTIONS

Date: APRIL 4, 1994
Time: 10:00 a.m.
Courtroom: 7

[Filed and served
concurrently with Dr
Geertz's Bill of Costs]

DECLARATION OF ROBERT VAUGHN YOUNG

I, Robert Vaughn Young, declare that I am over 18 years of age and
am a resident of Newport Beach, California.

INTRODUCTION

I have been retained as an expert consultant and expert witness by Dr. Uwe Geertz's counsel in the case captioned Church of Scientology International v. Steven Fishman and Uwe Geertz. *CV-6426-HLH (Tx) currently pending in the United States District Court, Central District of California. The statements herein are of my own personal knowledge or reasonably based upon information and belief, and if called upon as a witness, I can testify competently thereto.

This declaration is submitted in support of Defendant Dr. Geertz's motion for costs. fees. expenses and sanctions following the dismissal of this action with prejudice by the court on February 22, 1994.

My credentials as an expert on Scientology includes over 20 years as a staff member in the organization. In those 20 years, I have held nearly every type of position at every echelon. I have worked at the local, the regional, the national and the international levels. I have been a Scientology representative and spokesman before governmental bodies, the media and the courts. I have trained others on how to handle the media and governmental agencies. I have been the most senior public relations executive for Scientology world wide. I worked for years at the echelon that handles critics, "enemies," the media, judges, the courts and the government. I have been privy to documents and tactics of the most secret nature, including illegalities committed by Scientology executives and the means of cover-up. I have been called on many occasions to personally handle "hot" situations of the most sensitive nature ranging from the mysterious death of the son of Scientology Founder Ron Hubbard ("Hubbard") to the death of Hubbard himself. I have been privy to financial schemes and scams involving tens of millions of dollars. I also know how Scientology manipulates the law to avoid any revelation of the truth.

SCIENTOLOGY ADVOCATES USING THE
COURTS NOT TO SEEK JUSTICE BUT
TO HARASS AND RUIN PEOPLE

Plaintiff Church of Scientology International's ("CSI") request that this case be dismissed is in keeping with one of their most senior scriptures, "to use to courts to harass and ruin people rather than win. It has been a primary tactic since Hubbard gave the edict in 1955 when he wrote the purpose of bringing a lawsuit:

"The purpose of the suit is to harass and discourage rather than to win. The law can be used very easily to harass, and enough harassment on somebody who is simply on the thin edge anyway, well knowing that he is not authorized, will generally be sufficient to cause his professional decease. If possible. of course ruin him utterly." (From Hubbard's 1955 "The Scientologist: A Manual of Dissemination of Material." Emphasis added. Attached as Exhibit A) The basic reason that Scientology does not use the courts for justice is because Hubbard believed the Scientology justice system he invented was vastly superior and that his system should become the planetary standard.
DR. GEERTZ IS THE TARGET OF

SCIENTOLOGY'S VOW TO DESTROY "THE PSYCHS"

The key to understanding the mystery of the current lawsuit and its tortuous route will be found in the above Hubbard directive plus one further element: Defendant Dr. Uwe Geertz is a psychologist. Scientology has vowed to destroy and take over the field of mental health. Thus Dr. Geertz

is the target of Scientology's equivalent of "The Final Solution," where a profession has become a universal scapegoat. PSYCHS ARE SCIENTOLOGY'S SCAPEGOAT FOR EVERYTHING INCLUDING SEX

It is drilled into every Scientologist's head that all troubles and problems - Hubbard's, Scientology's, America's, the world, this corner of the galaxy and literally the entire universe - are due to psychiatrists and psychologists, known collectively as "the psychs." In fact, Hubbard said the ONLY cause of crime is the "psychs." He even goes so far as to say "there are no laws at all which protect them. . ." from being attacked. (See Hubbard's "The Cause of Crime," Attached as Exhibit B. See also declaration of Stacy Young also filed this date.)

The "psychs" are Hubbard's scapegoat for all historical ills going back not merely scores of years but hundreds, thousands and even millions of years. In Hubbard's paranoid view, everything from rock and roll to the Third Reich and even sex itself were vile inventions of 'psychs'. (See "Pain and Sex." Attached as Exhibit C.) As incredible as that may seem, Hubbard actually believed that sex was literally invented by "psychs" millions of years ago. While he doesn't come out and say it, the implications are clear: all sex - even the attraction between couples - is bad.

The intensity of Hubbard's anti-sex (and especially anti-female) attitude is no known to many

Scientologists. Starting in 1981, I had full access to Hubbard's most private papers, diaries and letters. I continued to have unlimited access to it for years as part of the work to write a biography of Hubbard and was able to read letters to and from his parents, wives, mistresses, friends and business associates. There were hundreds of thousands of pages of material - much of it originals or carbon copies in his own handwriting - that detailed his views about his life, his wives, his family and sex. Much of this was written in the 1930s and 1940s but extended into the 1970s. Some of these papers were diatribes against females and were covered with red-ink drawings of genitalia around the margins of the pages. He also graphically described what he wanted to do to women, including hurting and raping them. Suffice it to say that it was x-rated and sadistic. This was my initiation into the dark side of Hubbard's views. (these papers were subsequently locked away so no Scientologist will even know they exist, let alone allow anyone to see them.)

Hubbard's anti-female attitude appeared first, in private writings in the 1930s and 1940s. His views of "the psychs" developed after the publication of his first Scientology books in 1950 when he was courting "the psychs" for approval of his system. When he was rebuked and criticized, he became incensed and began to blame them for his troubles with the press and his customers.

Thus Dr. Geertz is viewed as a part of the international (and intergalactic) conspiracy that must be annihilated before Hubbard and Scientology can reign on Earth.

CSI'S CASE IS PART OF
THE "FAIR GAME DOCTRINE"
AND "PSYCHS" ARE FAIR GAME

CSI has a Fair Game Doctrine where any "enemy" can be "destroyed." This doctrine is practiced against apostates, critics, the press and has even been used against courts. It has been practiced against Dr. Geertz (starting with this lawsuit that put him into bankruptcy) and his counsel in this case (ranging from an investigation that this court ordered

stopped to vandalism of Mr. Graham Berry's property.

I will show how the Fair Game Doctrine started. how it has continued to this day and how this court has been exposed to these end-justifies-the-means methods. I will present this using the writings (now called "scriptures") of Hubbard. These are the iron-clad policies of Scientology

"FAIR GAME": THOSE THAT HAVE NO RIGHTS;
THEY AND/OR THEIR PROPERTY
CAN BE DESTROYED

The doctrine of Fair Game was codified on March 7, 1965, when Hubbard issued titled "Suppressive Acts: Suppression of Scientology and Scientologists: The Fair Game Law" (Attached as Exhibit D) Hubbard wrote,

By FAIR GAME is meant, without rights for self, possessions or position, and no Scientologist may be brought before a Committee of Evidence or punished for any action taken against a Suppressive Person or Group during the period that person or group is 'fair game'.

A revision of December 23 1965, changed it to read, "By- FAIR GAME is meant, may not be further protected by the codes and disciplines of Scientology or the rights of a Scientologist."

As to what was a "suppressive person," Hubbard gave the definition:

A SUPPRESSIVE PERSON or GROUP is one that actively seeks to suppress or damage Scientology or a Scientologist by Suppressive Acts.

SUPPRESSIVE ACTS are acts calculated to impede or destroy Scientology or a Scientologist and which are listed at length in this policy letter. (Caps in original.
Some of the suppressive acts listed included "public disavowal of Scientology;

public statements against Scientology;" asking for a refund of fees paid; and "writing anti-Scientology letters to the press." Even turning a Scientologist into the proper authorities can gain one the label of suppressive. The issue also prohibits "1st degree murder, arson, disintegration of persons or belongings not guilty of suppressive acts." (Emphasis added.) In other words, killing suppressive persons or destroying their property promotes Scientology and is therefore ethical within the Scientology belief system.

WHY SCIENTOLOGISTS CANNOT GIVE
UNBIASED TESTIMONY

The material just quoted also shows why Scientologists cannot give unbiased testimony. If the testimony is viewed as critical of Scientology or a Scientology executive, it would be a "public disavowal" and a "public statement against Scientology" and would be a suppressive act. The person could then be kicked out of Scientology and be made Fair Game and sued. Since Scientologists don't want this to happen to them, they will not make any critical remarks or remarks that may be deemed critical. This is why Scientology officials have insisted that only active Scientologists can be experts" - because they will be biased to Scientology rather than responding fully and honestly to the Court.

AN EXAMPLE OF HUBBARD
IMPLEMENTING FAIR GAME

Scientologists like to find instances where Hubbard applied a doctrine so they can imitate it. Hubbard gave an example of how Fair Game should be applied shortly after he created the doctrine. Hubbard gave specific orders on how to apply the Fair Game doctrine in HCO Executive letter 27 September 1965 or. "Amprinistics " (attached as Exhibit E) This was what he called a "splinter" group, a group that was using Scientology "technical" methods without his control. Hubbard's three-page issue blasts the Amprinistics leaders with a variety of sexual charges (one of his favorite topics for accusations) and says what should be done:

"They are each fair game, can be sued or harassed. Horner can be barred out of any Commonwealth Country or England as he

was the subject of a deportation order from England and his file has come alive again in the Home Secretary's Office. Harry Thompson's wives and victims are always looking for him to have him arrested. Watson is a set-up for arrest as a homosexual. Any meeting held by them should be torn up. The names of any persons attending should be collected and they should be labeled SP [suppressive person] as they have left Scientology. These people are SP because they are seeking to avoid auditing and retain their withholds. Once labeled, these persons will not then be covered by amnesty and will never be admitted to further training and processing. Persons messing themselves up with Amprinistic [techniques] should be refused any assistance. If these persons move into your area act through any agency you can to have them deported or arrested on whatever grounds. England is currently too hot for them so they may tour about. Horner's UK deportation order, Thompson's police record and Watson's homosexuality make them very vulnerable to deportation or arrest.

Hubbard does not stop there. He goes on to issue a five-step order that include

"(2) Harass these persons in any possible way....

"(4) Tear up any meeting held and get the names of those attending and issue SP orders on them and you'll have lost a lot of rats.

This order is has never been canceled and is still "scripture" as an example how to attack "enemies." In fact, as an example of how Fair Game was being implemented against another defendant, attached as Exhibit F is a declaration from former member David Mayo who describes how he was held captive for six months and was told he would "never leave the property alive." (See pages 4-8) He describes the duress and threats as he became the target of the Fair Game Doctrine (or "Fair Game Law.")

HOW SCIENTOLOGY USES INVESTIGATION AND THE MEDIA TO ATTACK AND HARASS CRITICS

In 1966, Hubbard began to codify those sections of Scientology that would implement Fair Game. For example, on February 17, 1966, he created the Public Investigation Section with a policy letter of that name and date. (Attached as Exhibit G) He said it would serve "the useful functions of a intelligence and propaganda agency. It finds the data and sees that it gets action." The statistic of the unit included "the number of derogatory news stories appearing that week related to enemies of Scientology."

Hubbard also urged the priority of finding evidence of "murder, assault, destruction, violence, sex and dishonesty, in that order. Investigations which can uncover these factors in the activities of individual

or a group attacking Scientology are valuable in the degree that they contain a number of these factors." And note that Hubbard's use of such evidence is not for law enforcement but to the media. "In that way," he wrote, "we then Get rid of suppressive groups by investigation and disclosure." (Emphasis added.)

The next day, on February 18, 1966, Hubbard wrote "Attacks on Scientology" (Attached as Exhibit H) in which he again urged the use of investigations. Suppressives, he said, have by definition committed criminal acts. "These people who attack have secrets. And hidden crimes. They are afraid." He thus urged they be investigated as this, he said, would cause the attacker to withdraw.

A week later, on February 25, 1966, he wrote another "Attacks on Scientology" policy letter (Attached as Exhibit I) in which he urged, to "Start feeding lurid, blood sex crime actual evidence on the attackers to the press."

See also Hubbard's "How To Do a Noisy Investigation" of 5 September 1966 (Attached as Exhibit J). The target is "attackers of Scientology".

FAIR (GAME DOCTRINE
SPECIFICALLY INCLUDES
THE FILING OF LAW SUITS

On October 18, 1967, he issued "Penalties for Lower Conditions" (Attached as Exhibit K) whereby Fair Game was automatically issued on anyone (including staff members) who was an "enemy." Such people were, he said, "Fair game. They may be deprived of property or injured by any MEANS by any Scientologist without any discipline of the Scientologist. May be tricked, sued or lied to or destroyed." (Emphasis added.)

CANCELLATION OF FAIR GAME ONLY MEANT
NOT USING THE WORDS ANY MORE BECAUSE
IT CAUSED "BAD PUBLIC RELATIONS"

In the late 1960s, Hubbard was having growing public relations problems. One problem was Fair Game. To deal with it, Hubbard wrote an issue that is often cited by CSI as evidence that Fair Game was canceled. But a careful reading will show that nothing has changed but semantics. The issue is "Cancellation of Fair Game" dated 21 October 1968. (Attached as Exhibit L) The entire text of the policy letter (P/L) is as follows:

"The practice of declaring people FAIR GAME will cease. FAIR GAME may not appear on any Ethics Order. It causes bad Public relations. [Emphasis added.] This P/L [policy letter] does not cancel any policy on the treatment or handling of an SP. [suppressive person]
L. Ron Hubbard Founder

THUS THE SO-CALLED "CANCELLATION"
OF FAIR GAME DID NOT CANCEL
THE USE OF FAIR GAME TACTICS

The original directive that CSI uses to say the Fair Game Doctrine was canceled expressly establishes that the only change was to stop using

the words "Fair Game.". Hubbard was quite clear that tactics were not to change. only the use of the words in public. As further evidence of Fair Game continuing, Hubbard later wrote "Confidential: Targets, Defense" on February 16, 1969, (Attached as Exhibit M) in which he listed "vital targets on which we must invest most of our time..." The first and most important: "T1. Depopularizing the enemy to a point of total obliteration."

MILITARY TACTICS ARE TO BE
USED IN FAIR GAME

On the same day, February 16, 1969, he wrote "Confidential: Battle Tactics" (Attached as Exhibit N) where he urged the use of military tactics and strategy in dealing with the "enemy." He wrote,

"A good general expends the maximum of enemy troops and the minimum of his own. He makes the war costly to the enemy, not to himself. One cuts off enemy communications, funds, connections. He deprives the enemy of political advantages, connections and power. He takes over enemy territory. He raids and harasses. All on a thought plane--press, public opinion, governments, etc. (Emphasis added.)

FAIR GAME TACTICS
EXPLAIN THIS LAWSUIT

When the Fair Game Doctrine and Scientology's "Final Solution" attitude towards "psychs" (psychologists and psychiatrists) are understood, this lawsuit can be understood. It will also be seen that what was at issue was not the deposition of the "celebrities" but those of the executives who were in non-compliance with this Court's Order. The reason was simple: they are the ones who directed this entire campaign.

HOW SCIENTOLOGY ATTORNEYS ARE USED
TO CLAIM "ATTORNEY WORK PRODUCT"

Surveillance is one of the standard tactics used by Scientology and COT. It is often done by staff from the Office of Special Affairs ("OSA"). Tougher or more important assignments are given to private investigators who are paid by attorneys so the investigation can be called "attorney work product." This practice was because the 1977 FBI raid shattered Scientology's intelligence network.

The court should note that it has been told that such practices were done by a previous Scientology administration that has been eradicated. This is not true. I am attaching the billings of a private investigator who was doing surveillance on author Omar Garrison and apostate Gerry Armstrong in 1982. (Attached as Exhibit O) These were billed to attorney John Peterson. ("Peterson") However this investigation was being directed by David Miscavige ("Miscavige") who at the time (mid-1982) was my senior in an organization called Author Services, Inc. ("ASI") ASI was a for-profit group that was purportedly a literary agency handling Hubbard's books. We did handle Hubbard's works but our real function was to serve as Hubbard's personal arm into the non-profit Church of Scientology. This investigation by Tin Goose of Omar Garrison and Gerry Armstrong was paid for by Church of Scientology funds on Miscavige's orders while Tin Goose

reported directly to Miscavige. Peterson was merely the "cutout," to make it appear that it was attorney work product and to keep it away from ASI.

HOW MISCAVIGE USED A "DOUBLE-BLIND" TO GO AFTER AN ATTORNEY

In 1982 a "double-blind" system was initiated by Miscavige when he was directing the campaign against Boston attorney Michael Flynn. ("Flynn") Flynn had been representing plaintiffs in suit against Scientology and Hubbard, and Miscavige was demanding that Flynn be destroyed. (This is the Fair Game Doctrine although the words were never used, per Hubbard's orders.) Peterson was told to hire another attorney who had no connection or any knowledge of Scientology. That fresh attorney was to hire the private investigators to undertake certain harassing actions on Flynn.

The purpose of the double-blind was if the investigator was caught and traced to an attorney, it would not be one hired by a Scientology group and any illegalities could be protected twice as attorney work product.

With the formation of the firm of Bowles and Moxon (attorneys for plaintiff in this case), investigations were moved to them rather than attorneys like Peterson because Bowles & Moxon are Scientologists and can be manipulated and threatened. Peterson was not a Scientologist and could not be so controlled.

EXPERTS AND COUNSEL ON THIS CASE WERE KEPT UNDER SURVEILLANCE

The court was advised of the investigation of counsel Graham Berry and ordered that it be stopped. (It was not because CSI cannot stop. Such investigations are required by Hubbard's "scriptures.") A similar investigation and surveillance was done of other experts on this case including myself and my wife. This went on for months. We have been tailed on the freeways, in shopping malls and even while a hundred miles from home on a day off. (In one instance, a tail I accosted confessed that he was tailing me and that he was Scientology staff.) Our trash has also been pilfered and former employers and associates interviewed. All of this is in keeping with the Fair Game Doctrine, hoping that they will find something to intimidate the person with. (If that doesn't happen, then something is concocted. They are now doing that with me, asserting that I assaulted a Scientologist in the city of Hemet. Their insistence that I be charged is being led - appropriately enough - by one of their key public relations people, Ken Hoden, who gets his orders from David Miscavige ("Miscavige") who is the head of the Scientology empire. At this writing, nothing has come of their baseless allegations.)

EXAMPLE OF TARGETING A PERSON IN LITIGATION WITH SCIENTOLOGY

Attached as Exhibit P is a Scientology program ("Julie's Background") designed to deal with a court problem in 1979. Julie Christofferson. She had sued the church and this program was written to

document that the people involved in the Christofferson case are criminals with criminal backgrounds and criminal records and that they engage in a criminal conspiracy to defraud the organization under the guise of "home and mother." Julie appears to be pure as the driven snow, so considerable background data [Scientology's euphemism for covertly obtained data] on her is needed to give us direction in

locating the real facts of interest about her.

Those "real facts of interest" are stated in the next paragraph as to what Scientology wants on the plaintiff.

The criminal background, drug history, record of arrests, former employment, perversions of Julie, fully known and documented, as

needed.

The program then goes on for pages to tell how to do this. There is nothing to indicate there is anything to find, merely the Hubbard-driven assumption that anyone who sues Scientology or attacks Scientology must by definition be a criminal. The program was written on Hubbard's direction.

CSI'S REFUSAL TO COMPLY IS BECAUSE OF
CSI'S COMPLETE DISDAIN FOR ANY SYSTEM
OTHER THAN HUBBARD'S

(CSI's general non-compliance with the orders of this Court was because of the disdain that Hubbard and the current leadership have for this and any court as well as the law. Time and again Hubbard wrote how his system of "justice" was superior to any system. Additionally Hubbard and Scientology were constantly being challenged by the courts. In Hubbard's view, neither he nor Scientology should have to answer to anyone. ACCORDING TO THE

SCIENTOLOGY
BELIEF SYSTEM. THE COURTS
ARE PART OF A CRIMINAL PLAN
DIRECTED BY "THE PSYCHS"

Another reason Hubbard and Scientology hold the courts in such disdain is Hubbard's view that the purpose of the justice system is to support psychologists and psychiatrists. This is done by "psychs" creating criminals who keep the courts alive who feed them back as a self-perpetuating system, funded entirely by the government. Hubbard wants to have the criminals fed to Scientology and to replace the legal system of justice with Hubbard's system, thus collecting the money that he felt is going to the psychiatrists and psychologists. (See attached as Exhibit Q "The Criminal Mind and The Psychs," attached as Exhibit R "The Cause of Crime," attached as Exhibit S "Criminals and Psychiatry," and attached as Exhibit C "Pain and Sex.")

THE ORDERED DEPOSITIONS
SHOULD HAVE PROCEEDED

The Court ordered David Miscavige, Norman Starkey, Mark Yager, Ray Mitoff, Lyman Spurlock, Marty Rathbun, Greg Wilhere and Jonathan Epstein to deposition. Most have, in turn, filed declarations to explain why they know nothing that is germane to this case. To the contrary, these are the executives who know more about this case than any other people.

Despite Miscavige's protests, he runs all of Scientology, regardless of corporate lines. In Scientology, there is only Scientology. Corporate lines are set up as ways to deflect the courts, the IRS and the authorities. When it comes to everyday work, Miscavige is appraised of every part of Scientology, from the church to the secular. He also issues orders to all sectors and approves all major transactions. His role is as the head of Scientology is well known within Scientology. It is only when it comes to

matters such as this suit that he and his lieutenants must suddenly conjure up the corporate lines and claim ignorance.

MISCAVIGE KNEW OF FISHMAN AND
CROSSED CORPORATE LINES TO
DEAL WITH FISHMAN'S MONEY

Additionally, Miscavige knows about Defendant Steve Fishman ("Fishman") and the amounts of money that Fishman contributed to Scientology. Miscavige had people removed from their positions because of the Fishman's money and now Miscavige claims he knows nothing. But Miscavige knows of the massive

amounts of money the Fishman had contributed. Miscavige gave a briefing at Golden Era Studios near Hemet, California, in 1987 to hundreds of staff (that included staff from non-CSI corporations) about Fishman's contribution of about \$80,000 for a library of "leather-bound" tapes. In that briefing, Miscavige screamed and cursed at the head of Golden Era Studios (Wendall Reynolds) because there were no such tapes to be sold. Miscavige (who is Chairman of the Board of the Religious Technology Center, a non-CSI entity) removed Reynolds from his position on the spot and assigned Reynolds to the gulag known as the Rehabilitation Project Force where he worked at hard labor for over two years. (I was sentenced to the same gulag for 14 months. Reynolds was there when I arrived.) Thus Miscavige not only knows of Fishman but has admitted it to hundreds of others. His claim he knows nothing is false testimony, as many can testify.

The others (Starkey, Yager, Mitoff et al) are Miscavige's immediate lieutenants who carry out his orders into their various sectors. They too know about the lack of corporate integrity and any role that Fishman played in Scientology. They also know about the various Hubbard directives I have quoted from. FISHMAN WAS BEING URGED TO INVEST IN "SPECIAL PROPERTIES," WHICH IS NOTHING BUT A FINANCIAL SCAM

The idea of "leather-bound tapes" is part of a line of "special properties" that was created by Miscavige in 1982 when he was Chairman of the Board at Author Services, Inc. ("ASI") I joined ASI in February, 1982, and left it in 1989. One of ASI's functions was to make millions of dollars for Hubbard. One way was by investments of Hubbard's fortune, which Miscavige directed, even though Miscavige had no investment background. Miscavige poured millions of dollars into oil speculation and lost it without telling Hubbard. (At one point the estimate was that Miscavige had lost about \$50 million of Hubbard's.) "Special Properties" was Miscavige's idea on how to recoup the millions before Hubbard (and the IRS) found out. The idea was to create "leather-bound special editions" and other items that could be sold at outrageous prices as an "investment". Those who bought books at thousands or even tens of thousands of dollars were then told a few months later how their "investment" had increased. Meanwhile, on the open market, the books were worth perhaps a hundred dollars, which was why Miscavige prohibited the open sale of these "Special Properties." (ASI now denies that there ever was a line of properties for investment.) This was how Fishman came to spend an astounding \$80,000 for a set of "leather-bound" tapes, which didn't even exist, and why Miscavige knew.

CSI HAS MISREPRESENTED ITS ROLE
IN RELATION TO THE "CELEBRITIES"

CSI's claim that it didn't want to put its "celebrities" through a

hardship is patently ridiculous. In my 20+ years in Scientology (which included working with many of them), I never once heard anything like this. To the contrary, it was just the reverse: "celebrities" would complain how they were being used, how they were being ordered to promote Scientology and being made to make media appearances when there was a legal problem or a problem in the media. The fact that these "celebrities" did not appear for their ordered depositions shows the control that CSI has over them. Now CSI turns it upside down again, claiming their welfare is why they want to drop a three-year old suit that has cost millions of dollars.

THE DEPOSITIONS OF THE "CELEBRITIES" DID NOT INVOLVE CONFIDENTIAL MATERIAL

CSI has made it a point that several "celebrities" will be exposed to "confidential" material if forced into deposition. I know what material CSI was referring to and those materials had nothing to do with the ordered depositions. The "confidential" material is what is called "upper level" material in Scientology. This material is reserved for certain steps in Scientology "counseling," and had nothing to do with the ordered depositions of "celebrities," none of whom are even familiar with them.

At no time has attorneys for Dr. Geertz asked me for any assistance in handling this material, as to what it might mean, how they might ask questions about it, how they might use it or how the material might be presented to a person in any deposition, let alone indicate in any way that they intend to use those materials with those "celebrities." Nor are attorneys for Dr. Geertz capable of doing this without expert help for the material in question is highly arcane, complex and bizarre and will make absolutely no sense to anyone outside of Scientology. Thus the idea that attorneys for Defendants will somehow expose these "celebrities" to this "upper level" material is merely a sham and an excuse. What was feared was that the other depositions would occur, namely that of Miscavige, Starkey, Yager, etc.

CSI's attempt to use their own refusal to comply with the court as the reason for dismissal is a classical Scientology through-the-looking-glass strategy.

DENIAL OF LEGAL LIABILITY WAS A TACTIC TAKEN ORIGINAL WITH HUBBARD

It was a long a well-known fact to Scientology executives that Hubbard ran Scientology, even though he had made public claims he was not. That was why there were programs to make it appear that Hubbard had no legal connection to the church. That tactic is what is now being used for Miscavige who has taken over Hubbard's position at the top of Scientology, even though Miscavige runs it just as Hubbard did. (See Exhibit T for "Operation Bulldozer Leak", a program designed to create that impression.)
CSI HAS NOT REFUTED YOUNG'S
STANDING AS AN EXPERT

In the declarations filed to claim discovery is complete, CSI has tried to refute my standing as an expert, even going to far as to twist the facts. For example, Miscavige tries to refute my claim that I arrived on the scene of Hubbard's before the authorities by saying that I arrived with some gardeners and cooks. This is not only not true but ridiculous since I arrived in the same entourage as Miscavige himself, two private investigators and attorney Earl Cooley who handled the disposition of Hubbard's body. Miscavige knows that I was a top Hubbard aide who was privy to considerable material and so do many others. He (Miscavige) can no more

tell the truth about my role than he can about his, that he runs all of Scientology. I stand by my declarations and the documents supplied with them and am confident that the Court can winnow the wheat from the chaff.

HUBBARD'S DEATH CREATED A POWER STRUGGLE THAT MISCAVIGE WON

Hubbard died in hiding in January, 1986. He had been in hiding for several years. Even though we were in weekly written communication with him at Author Services, Inc., it was our task to pretend we were not, to keep the authorities from knowing how to reach him. During this time, Hubbard's closest confidant was Pat Broeker who was living with him as his aide. When Hubbard died, a power struggle erupted between Broeker and Miscavige as to who would run Scientology. Miscavige won. Those on Broeker's side were purged. That included me. I was sent to a desert gulag for 14 months. Broeker's wife Annie gave in and arrived while I was there. She later escaped once and was captured and returned and kept under 24-hour guard. Pat disappeared and no one has heard of him since. It is not known if he is alive.

HUBBARD'S AND OTHER MYSTERIOUS DEATHS IN SCIENTOLOGY

When it comes to the issue of deaths in Scientology, there are some important ones to use as a measure, starting with that of its founder, Hubbard, who died in January, 1986. I arrived at his secret ranch near San Luis Obispo, California, within hours of his death, well before the authorities. I went with Miscavige, attorney Earl Cooley, two private investigators and a few other key, selected staff. It was our collective task take command of the situation. The greatest fear was that there would be a panic in the Church of Scientology if the circumstances of Hubbard's death were known. For example, while Hubbard's condition deteriorated in the final weeks, his personal physician (Dr. Gene Denk) was sent to Reno to gamble, leaving Hubbard with no medical attention. Or that Hubbard's primary source of Scientology help was a person who had taken LSD over 1000 times. Or that the story that Hubbard decided to "leave the body" (Scientology's way of saying "died") was dreamt up at the next morning to calm Scientologists. Or that the body was quickly disposed of to avoid any autopsy that would reveal "medicines" that he had been taking. Thus the actual truth of Hubbard's death has yet to be told.

Hubbard's son Quentin also died under mysterious circumstances in 1976. He had disappeared from his home in Clearwater, Florida, and was found unconscious in a car next to the Las Vegas airport.

(Coroner's report

is attached as Exhibit U. He died unidentified, as a "John Doe.")

The engine

of the car was on and a hose ran from the exhaust pipe (although it appeared to have fallen off when the authorities arrived) to the window, making it appear to be a suicide. But, like his father's death, there were a number of nagging questions. For example, Quentin was found unkempt with a beard stubble, a state that no one who knew Quentin could accept. (He was ultra-meticulous in his appearance.) Or that the license plate of the car was missing and found under a rock some distance away. Or that his wallet was gone, making identification impossible. Or that a near-empty bottle of liquor was found, as if he had been drinking, when Quentin did not. Or that there were needle marks on his arms, when he did not use drugs.

Another mysterious but key death was that of Flo Barnett,

Miscavige's mother-in-law. She died in 1985 of three shots to the chest and one to the temple from a semi-automatic rifle. Two suicide notes were found. Although she was only 5'3" tall (and weighed only 114 pounds), the examiner determined she shot herself three times in the chest (with a rifle) before shooting herself through the head. (See coroner's report attached as Exhibit V.) What the authorities didn't know was that she had left Scientology and was associating with apostates, to the anger of her son-in-law Miscavige.

Defendant Uwe Geertz was prepared to present information about other mysterious deaths, murders and suicides of Scientologists and former Scientologists.

CSI DID NOT COMPLY WITH DISCOVERY

One unfamiliar with Scientology systems might think there would be no other information to be provided but as a 20-year veteran and one intimately familiar with the unchanging system, I can attest there is considerable information that was not provided although requested by Dr. Geertz.

CSI has repeatedly protested how many documents and people it made available to Dr. Geertz. Being intimately familiar with Scientology files and data-gathering procedures, I can say that CSI has not turned over large volumes of requested material and personnel to Dr. Geertz that are germane to this case. For example, there are extensive files (including computerized) that would enable a person to determine the effect of adverse press. These are kept and maintained on weekly basis. I personally know of them for I have worked with and have seen these files. They have been kept by Scientology for decades. These were not provided to Dr. Geertz. Nor were other material that would have been collected on Dr. Geertz. such as reports from private investigators, credit checks, all standard actions in Scientology proceedings. Nor has CSI supplied material regarding their investigation of Fishman's role in Scientology even though CSI's corporate secretary Lynn Farny said he had seen and reviewed such material.

Nor has CSI supplied those personnel that would know most about the truth or falsity of the facts in question in the Time magazine article. Those people are Miscavige, Yager, Willhere and Mitoff, Epstein, Spurlock and Starkey would know about Fishman's financial roles and Scientology financial scams.)

IT IS ROUTINE TO ALTER SCIENTOLOGY

RECORDS AND FILES TO AVOID THE AUTHORITIES

As early as 1971, I was introduced to the practice of altering Scientology records and files to thwart the authorities. This occurred when I worked as the Temporary Assistant Guardian in San Francisco. Under me was the Intelligence Bureau which was where Scientology was running its spies and agents. One day I received an order from the Guardian's Office United States (in Los Angeles) and was told to do a "clean-up" on any reference to Marsha Williams because she was going to become staff of the Intelligence Bureau in Los Angeles and possibly become an agent. What a "clean-up" meant was that I was to find and remove any reference to her anywhere in the San Francisco organization, where she had served, so there would be no record of her in the organization. This was to thwart any investigation of her or any trace on her by any authorities. I removed her name from various records and files and sent the material to Los Angeles. I later saw her in Los Angeles, as Intelligence staff, when I joined the US

Guardian's Office.

After the Federal Bureau of Investigation ("FBI") raided three Church of Scientology locations in 1977 to obtain documentation regarding violations of the law, I worked with scores of other people to quickly destroy any further evidence to keep it from falling into the hands of the authorities. We were all verbally briefed how we had to go through files and look for (1) any documents showing illegal activity and (2) any documents to show that Hubbard was running Scientology (which he was but we were trying to tell the authorities that he wasn't) and to destroy these documents. In this campaign, the amount of documents that were destroyed were in cardboard boxes stacked down halls. I do not know the page count but the stack was about four feet wide, four feet high and about 60 feet long. And this was from the location with the least amount of files. And there was no doubt that we were doing this to destroy incriminating evidence. In fact, several of us questioned this and were told to shut up and keep shredding paper.

Circa 1983 when I worked at Hubbard's "literary agency" Author Services, Inc., we were told there was a threat of an IRS raid on us and we had to move documents. These went to another floor in the building where we kept watch on them. There were about 50 bankers boxes of files that we were keeping hidden from the authorities who were also serving subpoenas to get records. Our task was to keep these other records secret. The files were kept on that other floor for a couple of months.

This last instance is cited in particular to anticipate the reply of CSI that the earlier examples were from an earlier regime that has been overthrown. This is not true. In fact, the 1983 instance at ASI was conducted by Miscavige who currently runs all of Scientology.

Thus the cleaning up of files to remove embarrassing or incriminating material was routine and the non-appearance of Fishman's name in certain groups is not indicative that he was not there.

CONTRARY TO THEIR DECLARATIONS,
CSI IS STILL USING THE ORIGINAL
GUARDIAN OFFICE STAFF

On a number of occasions, CSI has tried to disassociate itself from the Guardian's Office that was raided by the FBI in 1977 and the Guardian Office staff that went to jail, including Hubbard's wife, Mary Sue. It has been CSI's contention that those associated with the crimes were purged. This is not true.

The precise target of the FBI raid was the Snow White Program in the Intelligence Bureau of the Guardian's Office. In 1989 the Snow White Program was still active and one of its key staff was Grace Marie Haddy. (See "Non-Existence Formula" dated 12/16/89 from Snow White Pgms Chief OSA US attached as Exhibit W) Grace Marie Haddy was a key executive of the intelligence bureau and was privy to all communications detailing the illegalities that subsequently sent the 11 executives to jail.

Handling CSI's case before this court is Kendrick Moxon ("Moxon") who was named as an unindicted co-conspirator when Mary Sue and the others were indicted. Moxon was head of the Guardian Office Legal Bureau in Washington, D.C. (See the "Stipulation of Evidence" attached to the declaration of Vicki Aznaran, also filed 3/9/94 which includes a description of Moxon's role in obstructing the investigation of the Department of

Justice.)

THIS CASE DOES NOT CONCERN
PLAINTIFF CSI

With over 20 years as a staff member in various Scientology entities, both inside the Church of Scientology and in secular Scientology groups, I can say with confidence that after reading the article in Time magazine and the section for which Fishman and Dr. Geertz are being sued, I did not think of CSI. Although I was well aware that CSI existed, it would have been one of the last entities that would have come to mind. The article and the sections in question are about Scientology as a subject and practice, including the secular side of Scientology. (The secular side of Scientology is a multi-million dollar activity that has been kept hidden from the court. This side promotes that Hubbard's writings - the same ones used in this case as scriptures" are non-religious and "secular" and can be used in commercial enterprises to help the business or a client. This is the Jekyll & Hyde syndrome of Scientology, how they pretend to be a religion or a business, according to the potential customer or situation.)

CSI'S CASE DOES NOT HAVE MERIT
FOR SEVERAL COGENT REASONS

Besides the fact that the Time article is not about CSI, there are additional reasons why CSI's case has no merit. Some of these have already been covered. (1) CSI refused to comply with discovery. (2) CSI never intended to complete discovery because the suit was brought solely for malicious reasons (to punish a member of a group Scientology has promised to destroy, according to the Fair Game Doctrine.) (3) CSI is not the true plaintiff. Being familiar with the ecclesiastical and corporate structures of Scientology, I know by reading the passages at issue that Dr. Geertz was not speaking of Plaintiff Church of Scientology International ("CSI"). However that is one of the roles that CSI has, to intervene, because it has the manpower to wage lawsuits and to carry out the Fair Game Doctrine via the Office of Special Affairs. (4) There is a likelihood that what Dr. Geertz said is true, that Fishman was told to "end cycle" and to kill Dr. Geertz. CSI's refusal to provide information and deponents has prevented an adequate defense. But based on my 20 years in Scientology and seeing the level of criminality that was able to permeate the organization - always kept from the view of all but a select few - I cannot discount his allegations. (5) Even if Defendants statements are false, CSI was not hurt. By their own mission. CSI has no members that can be wronged. Additionally by Scientology's own writings, no press ever hurts them, especially anything in Time magazine. To the contrary, they have claimed that they grow in the face of such adverse publicity. Thus CSI must either admit that they were not harmed or admit that their Hubbard's claims of Scientology's infallibility are false.

The simple truth of this case boils down to this: the suit was brought under the "anti-psych" Fair Game doctrine by an entity without members and without standing (CSI) because it has an anti-"psych" arm whose function is to take over the field of mental health and destroy Hubbard's enemies. I know because I worked at that echelon for nearly 20 years and know it and the tactics intimately.

I declare under penalty of perjury under the laws of the United States of America and the State of California that the foregoing is true and correct.

Executed in Los Angeles,

California, this 9th day

Robert Vaughn Young

of March, 1994.

F.A.C.T.Net, Inc.
(Fight Against Coercive Tactics Network, Incorporated)
a non-profit computer bulletin board and electronic library
601 16th St. #C-217 Golden, Colorado 80401 USA
BBS 303 530-1942
FAX 303 530-2950
Office 303 473-0111

This document is part of an electronic lending library and
preservational electronic archive. F.A.C.T.Net does not sell
documents, it only lends them according to the terms of your
library cardholder agreement with F.A.C.T.Net, Inc.

=====

-
1. CURRENT FILE NAME:
 2. ADMINISTRATIVE CODE:OK
 3. SECURITY CODE:GP
 4. DISTRIBUTION CODE:PDMCF
 5. DESCRIPTIVE NAME FOR BBS: CRITERIA FOR DETERMINING IF A GROUP
IS A DANGEROUS AND DESTRUCTIVE CULT
 6. SORT TO: SCIENTOLOGY CONFERENCE LEGAL AND GENERAL
 7. CONTRIBUTOR: IMHO-F.A.C.T.
 8. LOC. OF ORIG. OR IMAGE FILE: F.A.C.T.
 9. NOTES:
 10. FINAL PROOFING DONE ON (DATE):
 11. FINAL PROOFING DONE BY:
 12. FINAL INDEXING DONE ON (DATE):
 13. FINAL INDEXING DONE BY:

APPENDIX 3 CRITERIA FOR DETERMINING IF A GROUP IS A DANGEROUS
AND DESTRUCTIVE CULT

Q1.) Anybody can unfairly accuse or attack an organization or
group they disagree with or dislike by calling it a cult or
saying that they are using coercive mind control or coercive
psychological systems as you call it. How does F.A.C.T.
determine these things fairly and prevent this type of problem?

A1.) F.A.C.T. uses specific criteria to determine if a coercive
psychological system has been used. It does not imply
organizations or individuals are using coercive psychological

systems or are destructive or dangerous cults without careful research and determination that the evidence fits definite criteria. These criteria are threefold: The first set of criteria comes from the description of "Tactics of Psychological Coercion" in Appendix 1. The second set of criteria have to do with defining common elements of destructive and dangerous cults. The following section will help clarify what some of those specific elements and criteria are.

Common Properties of Potentially Destructive and Dangerous Cults

The cult is authoritarian in its power structure.

The leader is regarded as the supreme authority. He or she may delegate certain power to a few subordinates for the purpose of seeing that members adhere to the leader's wishes and roles. There is no appeal outside of his or her system to greater systems of justice. For example, if a school teacher feels unjustly treated by a principal, appeals can be made. In a cult, the leader claims to have the only and final ruling on all matters.

The cult's leaders tend to be charismatic, determined, and domineering.

They persuade followers to drop their families, jobs, careers, and friends to follow them. They (not the individual) then take over control of their followers' possessions, money, lives. The cult's leaders are self-appointed, messianic persons who claim to have a special mission in life. For example, the flying saucer cult leaders claim that people from outer space have commissioned them to lead people to special places to await a space ship.

The cult's leaders center the veneration of members upon themselves.

Priests, rabbis, ministers, democratic leaders, and leaders of genuinely altruistic movements keep the veneration of adherents focused on God, abstract principles, and group purposes. Cult leaders, in contrast, keep the focus of love, devotion, and allegiance on themselves.

The cult tends to be totalitarian in its control of the behavior of its members.

Cults are likely to dictate in great detail what members wear, eat, when and where they work, sleep, and bathe-as well as what to believe, think, and say. The cult tends to have a double set of ethics. Members are urged to be open and honest within the group, and confess all to the leaders. On the other hand, they are encouraged to deceive and manipulate outsiders or nonmembers. Established religions teach members to be honest and truthful to all, and to abide by one set of ethics.

The cult has basically only two purposes, recruiting new members and fund-raising.

Established religions and altruistic movements may also recruit and raise funds. However, their sole purpose is not to

grow larger; such groups have the goals to better the lives of their members and mankind in general. The cults may claim to make social contributions, but in actuality these remain mere claims, or gestures. Their focus is always dominated by recruiting new members and fund-raising.

The cult appears to be innovative and exclusive.

The leader claims to be breaking with tradition, offering something novel, and instituting the only viable system for change that will solve life's problems or the world's ills. While claiming this, the cult then surreptitiously uses systems of psychological coercion on its members to inhibit their ability to examine the actual validity of the claims of the leader and the cult.

The third set of criteria has to do with defining other common elements of coercive psychological systems. If most of Robert Jay Lifton's eight point model of thought reform is being used in a cultic organization, it is most likely a dangerous and destructive cult. These eight points are:

1. ENVIRONMENT CONTROL. Limitation of many/all forms of communication with those outside the group. Books, magazines, letters and visits with friends and family are taboo. "Come out and be separate!"
2. MYSTICAL MANIPULATION. The potential convert to the group becomes convinced of the higher purpose and special calling of the group through a profound encounter/experience, for example, through an alleged miracle or prophetic word of those in the group.
3. DEMAND FOR PURITY. An explicit goal of the group is to bring about some kind of change, whether it be on a global, social, or personal level. "Perfection is possible if one stays with the group and is committed."
4. CULT OF CONFESSION. The unhealthy practice of self disclosure to members in the group. Often in the context of a public gathering in the group, admitting past sins and imperfections, even doubts about the group and critical thoughts about the integrity of the leaders.
5. SACRED SCIENCE. The group's perspective is absolutely true and completely adequate to explain EVERYTHING. The doctrine is not subject to amendments or question. ABSOLUTE conformity to the doctrine is required.
6. LOADED LANGUAGE. A new vocabulary emerges within the context of the group. Group members "think" within the very abstract and narrow parameters of the group's doctrine. The terminology sufficiently stops members from thinking critically by reinforcing a "black and white" mentality. Loaded terms and clichés prejudice thinking.
7. DOCTRINE OVER PERSON. Pre-group experience and group experience are narrowly and decisively interpreted through the absolute doctrine, even when experience contradicts the doctrine.
8. DISPENSING OF EXISTENCE. Salvation is possible only in the group. Those who leave the group are doomed.

=====
If this is a copyrighted work, you are acknowledging by receipt of this document from FACTNet that on the basis of reasonable investigation, you have not been to obtain a copy elsewhere at a fair price, and that you are and will abide by the following copyright warning.

WARNING CONCERNING COPYRIGHT RESTRICTIONS: The copyright law of the United States (Title 17, United States Code) governs the making of photo copies or other reproductions of copyrighted material. Under certain conditions specified by law, libraries and archives are authorized to furnish a photocopy or other reproduction. One of these specified conditions is that the photocopy or reproduction is not to be "used for any purpose other than private study, scholarship, or research." If a user makes a request for, or later uses, a photocopy or reproduction for purposes in excess of "fair use," that user may be liable for copyright infringement.

FACTNet reserves the right to refuse to accept an order for copying or other duplication, or delivery of copied or duplicated material if in its judgment, fulfillment of the order would involve violation of copyright law.

CARD CATALOG ENTRY

DOS FILENAME OF TEXT FILE: E:\PCB\SCN\FILES\GENERAL\CULTCRIT.TXT

DOS FILENAME OF IMAGE FILES:

ADMINISTRATIVE CODE:

SECURITY CODE:

DISTRIBUTION CODE:

NAME FOR BBS:

SORT TO:

CONTRIBUTOR:

LOC. OF ORIG:

NOTES:

For additional verification see image files contained in the file with same name and .ZIP extension.

UPDATED ON:

UPDATED BY:

=====

US District Court, Central District of California
Fishman Case # 91-6426 HLH (Tx) Continued

Exhibit B

(title page -no number just 'exhibit B'

nia. Dismas House, Room 324
141 N. W. 1st Avenue
Dania, Florida 33004

(0027)

Exhibit B

(title page -no number just 'exhibit B'

ON CONTROL AND LYING

THE ONLY WAY YOU CAN CONTROL PEOPLE IS TO LIE TO THEM. You can write that down in your book in great big letters. The only way you can control anybody is to lie to them. When you find an individual is lying to you, you know that the individual is trying to control you. One way or another this individual is trying to control you. That is the mechanism of control. This individual is lying to you because he is trying to control you - because if they give you enough misinformation they will pull you down the tone scale so that they can control you. Conversely, if you see an impulse on the part of a human being to control you, you know very well that that human being is lying to you. Not "is going to", but "is" lying to you.

[last sentence is underlined in original]

Check these facts, you will find they are always true. That person who is trying to control you is lying to you. He's got to tell you lies in order to continue control, because the second you start telling anybody close to the truth, you start releasing him and he gets tougher and tougher to control. So, you cant control somebody without telling them a bunch of lies. You will find that vry often Command has this as its greatest weakness. It will try to control instead of leading. The next thing you know, it is lying to the [illegible]. Lie, lie, lie, and it gets worse and worse, and all of a sudden the thing blows up. Well, religion has done this. [Following sentence is underlined] Organised religion tries to control, so therefore must be lying. [end underline] After a while it figures out (even itself) that it is lying, and then it starts down tone scale further and further, and all of a sudden people get down along this spring-like bottom (heresy) and say, "Are we going into apathy and die, or are we going to revolt?" and they revolt, because you can only lie to people so long. Unfortunately there is always a new cycle of lying.

L. Ron Hubbard
Technique 88

(0029)

Letter of Authenticity

Exhibit G

US District Court, Central District of California
Fishman Case # 91-6426 HLH (Tx) Continued
(Title page no number)

MAGAZINE ARTICLES ON
LEVEL

0

CHECKSHEET
BY L RON HUBBARD

(0055)

(Hand bracketed passages in original surrounded by [])

Dissemination of Material

The dissemination of materials of Scientology is a problem of comparable stature to the use of techniques on a preclear in an auditing session. Just as you would not process a preclear with heavy processes when all he could take might be ARC Straight Wire, thus you would not issue Scientology materials of considerable weight to people incapable of assimilating them.

The immediate result of the issuance of materials not intended for that audience is to produce a state of confusion in the minds of that audience regarding Scientology. Here we have no question of talking down to people. Here we have no question of 'watering' our material, but we do have a question of disseminating Scientology. If we do it properly, then Scientology will be very broadly known. If we do it improperly it will stop in its tracks, and be known, if at all as a confusion.

When materials are issued above the acceptance level of an audience, a confusion results. A confusion in the antithesis of a flow. Any communication resulting in a confusion then brings about an eddy of confusion. The employment of Scientology to the greatest good of the greatest number of Dynamics does not include using it knowingly or unknowingly to confuse hearers.

An outline of the communication lines of Scientology follows:

1. The General public to the general public.
2. Scientologists to the general public
3. Member HASI to member HASI.
4. Trained Scientologist to a member of the HASI.
5. Member of HASI to a preclear.
6. Trained Scientologist to a preclear.
7. Trained Scientologist to a trained Scientologist.
8. HASI to membership
9. HASI to trained Scientologist.
10. HASI to the general public

-50-

1. GENERAL PUBLIC TO THE GENERAL PUBLIC

There are several things we would like the general public to say to the general public about Scientology. The first of these is that we would like the general public, when it sees an individual or group

problem, to be quite certain the proper thing to do is for that individual or group to consult a Scientologist. For instance, if somebody is having headaches, we would his friends to come to the obvious solution that this person should see a Scientologist or should join a group undergoing processing.

The meat on this communication line is that Scientology does not pose any threat, that Scientologists are good citizens, and that they can be trusted with problems of a private and confidential nature, or with problems dangerous to other people such as the problem of criminality. Another frame of mind we would like to see the public and register is that people attacking Scientologists have something wrong with them (and if you could meet any such people personally you would see that this is no more than truth). As a subdivision of this, the actual substance of communication about what Scientology is, from the general public to the general public, should be that Scientology says that good health and immortality are attainable. That it is something compounded out of all Man knows of the subject of Man, and that people are living units operating bodies, rather than bodies, and that this living unit is the human soul. Given this much communication line, the general public can embroider enormously, and unless a person in the general public can express his own opinions, and so let HIM be interesting, he will not talk about the subject. Thus the data in the general public should give individuals a chance to be interesting, by knowing no more and no less than the above. We are not interested in sensationalism personalities, or the complexity of Scientology methodology being discussed by the general public. At a subdivision of this, we do not want Scientology to be reported in the press, anywhere else than on the religious page of newspapers. It is destructive of word of mouth to permit the public presses to express their biased and badly reported sensationalism. Therefore we should be very alert to sue for slander at the slightest chance so as to discourage the public presses from mentioning Scientology. What the newspapers say is not word of mouth. As an example of this, how many minutes today have you spent discussing current events? NEWSPAPER REPORTERS WRITING ARTICLES ON SCIENTOLOGY DO NOT EXPRESS SCIENTOLOGY. Scientologists should never let themselves be interviewed by the press. That's experience talking!

As a subdivision of general public to general public we have the problem of the professionals which might consider Scientology to be antipathetic to them, amongst these would be psychologists and medical doctors as well as psychiatrists. These persons are entirely in error when they express the opinion that Scientologists are against

-51-
(0056)

Fishman Case No. 91-6426 HLH (tx)
continued...

(5 or 6 words illegible) -or system will produce in 22 percent, of the public, benefit. Therefore, any practice or art can always achieve 22 per cent recovery in thier patients. It is when we better this 22 percent, that we are being efficient. We have no more quarrel with a psychologist that we would have with an Australian witch-doctor. We have no quarrel with a pychiatrist any more that we would quarrel with a barbarian because he has never heard of nuclear physics. As to the medical doctor, we know very well that modern medical practice, having lately outgrown

phlebotomy, has come of age to point where it can regulate structure in a most remarkable and admirable way. In Scientology we believe a medical doctor definitely has his role in a society just as an engineer has his role in civil government. We believe that a medical doctor should perform emergency operations such as those made necessary by accidents; that he should perform orthopedics; that he should deliver babies; that he should have charge of the administration of drugs; that his use of antibiotics is beneficial; and that wherever he immediately and curatively addresses structure his is of use in a community. The only place we would limit a medical doctor is in the field of treatment of psychosomatic medicine, where he has admittedly and continuously failed, and the only thing we would ask a medical doctor to change about his practice is to stop taking money for things he knows he cannot cure, i.e., spiritual, mental, psychosomatic, and social ills.

With regard to psychologists, medical doctors, and psychiatrists, then, what would one say in talking to them? But again we have section 10 of the Code of the Scientologist. You wouldn't expect this psychologist, or psychiatrist, or medical doctor to get into an argument with you on how to get rats to find their way through mazes, how you would set a tibia, or what voltage you would put on an electric shock machine. Therefore, and equally, do not permit yourself to be put in the situation where you are discussing privately or in public, the methodologies of your wisdom. The attitude of a Scientologist toward people in these professions should be: "I have my techniques. It took me a long time to learn them just as it took you a long time to learn yours, and I am not going to try to make a minster out of you, and you are not going to try to make a medical doctor (psychiatrist, psychologist) out of me. I am an expert instructor only where it is intimately involved with the human spirit. I can produce my effects. You can produce yours. In view of the fact that you do not pretend to operate in the field of the human spirit, and I do not operate in the field of structure, I do not see how there can be any discussion. But things that I can't handle in structure when called upon I will be very happy to refer to you, and I shall expect that when matters of the spirit come into question you will have enough understanding of life, where we are all specialists, to refer them to me" A quiet explanation of this character will do a great deal to place you as a professional man in their realm of understanding of professional men.

-52-

In a hospital or an institution from some ????? malady which balked the efforts of the professional men in charge of it, and should you ever be "called upon the carpet" for having "interfered" with the progress of a case, you should be extremely dismayed, and act it, to find yourself in the presence of barbarians who do not believe in the power of prayer, in the will of God, or in the promises of Jesus Christ. And you should point out that, whereas the body was in their keeping, they did not at any time care to take purview of the human soul. And if anything has occurred because the soul, in your province, then reacted upon the body, you believe that they are unwilling to admit the will of God in their treatment of human beings, and if this is the case you now, while you are being addressed by such people, discover yourself to be in a strange place where men pretending to be Christians doubt God, the Son of God, and the power of prayer. Your entire address to such people, in such a situation, publically or privately, should be entirely overt, accusative, and not at any time apologetic. And you should immediately make it your buss-

iness to place this matter before the proper authorities, that people are in charge of an institution here, are not Christians, and do not believe in God, and you should inform your accusers that you are going to do so.

Should you ever be arrested for practicing Scientology, treating people, make very sure, long before the time comes, that you have never used drugs or surgery, and that you have never prescribed a diet, or vitamins, and when that time might come, make very sure that you immediately and instantly, within two or three hours after your receipt of the warrant, have served upon the signer of the warrant, a personal civil suit for \$100,000.00 damages for having caused the arrest of a Man of God going about his business in his proper profession, and for having brought about embarrassing publicity and molestation. place the suit and WIRE THE HASI IMMEDIATELY. Make the whole interest during the entire time of such an unfortunate occurrence the fact that the signer of such a warrant, who would ordinarily be a medical doctor in charge of the medical department of some city, had dared fly in the teth of religion. And we use what is necessary of the earlier passage above to drive the point home. DO NOT simply fall back out of communication if you are attacked, but attack, much more forcefully and carefully and arduously. And if you are foolish enough to have an attorney who tells you not to sue, immediately dismiss him and get an attorney who will sue. Or, if no attorney will sue, simply have an HASI suit form filled out and present it yourself to the county clerk in the court of the area in which your case has come up.

IN ALL SUCH CASES OR ARREST FOR THE PRACTICE OF SCIENTOLOGY, THE HASI WILL SEND A REPRESENTATIVE AT ONCE, BUT DO NOT WAIT FOR HIS ARRIVAL TO PLACE THIS SUIT. THE SUIT MUST ALREADY HAVE BEEN FILED WHEN THE HASI ATTORNEY ARRIVES.

-53-

(0057)

In other words, do not, at any moment leave this act unpunished, for, if you do you are harming all other Scientologists in the area. When you are attacked it is your responsibility then to secure from further attack not only yourself but all those who work with you. Cause blue flame to dance over the court house roof until everybody has apologized profusely for having dared to become so adventurous as to arrest a Scientologist who, as a minister of the church, was going about his regular duties. As far as the advances of attorneys go that you should not sue, that you should not attack, be aware of the fact that I, myself, in Wichita, Kansas, had the rather interesting experience of discovering that my attorney employed by me and paid by me, had been for some three months in the employ of the people who were attacking me, and that this attorney has collected some insignificant sum of money after I hired him, by going over to the enemy and acting upon their advices. This actually occurred, so beware of attorneys that tell you not to sue. And I call to you attention the situation of any besieged fortress. If that fortress does not make allies, does not send forth patrols to attack and harass, and does not utilize itself to make the besieging of it a highly dangerous occupation, that fortress may, and most often does, fall. [The DEFENSE of anything is UNTENABLE. The only way to] [defend anything is to ATTACK, and if you ever forget that, then you] [will lose every battle you are ever engaged in, whether it is in terms] [of personal conversation, public debate or court of law. NEVER]

[BE INTERESTED IN CHARGES. DO, yourself, much MORE]
[CHARGING, and you will WIN. And the public, seeing that you]
[won, will then have a communication line to the effect that Scientolo-]
[gists WIN. Don'y ever let them have any other though that that]
[Scientology takes all its objectives.]

Another point directly in the interest of keeping the general public to the general public communiacion line is good odor: it is vitally importnat that a Scientologist put into action and overtly keep in action Article 4 of the Code: "I pledge myself to punish to the fullest extent of my power anyone misusing or degrading Scientology to harmful ends." The only way you can gaurantee that Scvientology will not be degraded or misued is to make sure that only those who are trained in it practice it. If you find somebody practicing Scientology who is not qualified, you should give them the oppor-tunity to be formally trained, at their expense, so that they will not abuse and degrade the subject. And you would not take as any substutute for formal training any amount of study.

You would therefore delegate to members of the HASI who are not otherwise certified only those processes mentioned below, and vould discourage them from using any other processes. More par-ticularly, if you discovered that some group calling itself "precept processing" had set up and established a series of mettings in your area, that you would do all you could to make things interesting for them. In view of the fact that the HASI holds copyrights for all such material, and that a scientific organization of materials
-54-

can be copyrighted and therefore owned. The least that could be done to to such an area is the placement of a suit against them for using materials of Scientology without authority. Only a member of the HASI or a member of one of the churches affiliated with the HASI has the authority to use this information. The purpose of the suit [is to harass and discourage rather than win.]

[The law can be used very easily to harass, and enough harassment]
[on somebody who is simply on the thin edge anyway, well knowing]
[that he is not authorized, will generally be sufficient to cause his pro-]
[essional decease. If posible, of course, ruin him utterly]

A D.ScN. has the power to revoke a certificate below the level of D.ScN but not a D.ScN. However, he can even recammend to the *CECS of the HASI that D Scns be revoked, and so any sincere Scientologist is capable of policing Scientology. This is again all in the interest of keeping the public with good opinion of Sciento-logy, since bad group processing and bad auditing are worse than bad publicity and are the worst thing that can happen to the general public to general public communication line.

The best thing that can happen to it is good auditing, good public presentation, and a sincere approach on the subject of Scientology itself. Remember, we are interested in ALL treatment being beneficial, whether it is Scientology or not. For bad treatment in any line lowers the public opinion of all treatment.

In addressing persons professionally interested in the ministry, we have another intersting problem in public presentation. We should not engage in religious discussions. In the first place, as Scientologists

we are gnostics, which is to say we know what we know. People in the ministry ordinarily suppose that knowingness and knowledge are elsewhere resident than in themselves. They believe in belief and substitute belief for wisdom. This makes Scientology no less a religion, but makes it a religion with an older tradition and puts it on an intellectual plane.

Religious philosophy, then as presented by Scientology, would be opposed in such discussion to religious practice. We are all-denominational rather than non-denominational, and we should be perfectly willing to include in our ranks a Moslem, or a Taoist, as well as any Protestant or Catholic, while people of the ministry in Western civilization, unless they are evangelists, are usually dedicated severely to some faction which in itself is in violent argument with many other similar factions. Thus these people are ready to argue and are practiced in argument, and there are more interpretations of one line of scripture than there are sunbeams in a day. Beyond explaining one's all-denominational character, explaining that one holds the Bible as a holy work, one should recognize that the clergy of Western Protestant churches defines minister or standing....

*Committee for Examination, Certification and Services

-55-

(0058)

F.A.C.T.Net, Inc.
(Fight Against Coercive Tactics Network, Incorporated)
a non-profit computer bulletin board and electronic library
601 16th St. #C-217 Golden, Colorado 80401 USA
BBS 303 530-1942
FAX 303 530-2950
Office 303 473-0111

This document is part of an electronic lending library and
preservational electronic archive. F.A.C.T.Net does not sell
documents, it only lends them according to the terms of your
library cardholder agreement with F.A.C.T.Net, Inc.

=====

-
1. CURRENT FILE NAME: APP2A.TXT
 2. ADMINISTRATIVE CODE:OK
 3. SECURITY CODE:GP
 4. DISTRIBUTION CODE:PDMCF
 5. DESCRIPTIVE NAME FOR BBS: Scientology's History of Criminality.
This appendix was submitted in sum and substance to the California
Court of Appeals, the California Supreme Court and the U.S. Supreme
Court as an appendix to existing briefs in the Wollersheim case.
Their purpose was to inform the court as to the actual history,
nature, activities, and goals of Scientology as opposed to what
Scientology's propaganda machine would like the court to believe.
Must Reading for someone interested in Scientology's financial
history.
 6. SORT TO: ONE COPY TO IN SCIENTOLOGY LEGAL\WOLLERSHEIM, ONE
COPY TO GENERAL
 7. CONTRIBUTOR: IMHO-LAWRENCE WOLLERSHEIM
 8. LOC. OF ORIG. OR IMAGE FILE: LAWRENCE WOLLERSHEIM & F.A.C.T.
 9. NOTES:
 10. FINAL PROOFING DONE ON (DATE):
 11. FINAL PROOFING DONE BY:
 12. FINAL INDEXING DONE ON (DATE):
 13. FINAL INDEXING DONE BY:

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00001

APPENDIX 2

SCIENTOLOGY'S HISTORY OF CRIMINALITY 1

In 1979, nine of Scientology's top executives pleaded guilty to extensive burglaries, forgeries, "infiltration," "obstruction of justice," and other crimes carried out against over 100 Federal agencies including the Dept. of Justice, The Dept. of Defense and the I.R.S.

In U.S. v Heldt et. al. 3 the facts showed that church personnel had secreted and destroyed (~ documentary evidence of crime, (688 F.2d at 1243 n.8), had committed illegal break-ins and theft, (id. at 1244,1247, 1248), had electronically bugged government offices, (ibid), had lied to federal investigators and a grand jury, (id. at 1246,1247,1248,1249 , 1253), had suborned perjury, (id. at 1247,1253), had forcibly restrained, kidnaped, handcuffed and gagged a potential adverse witness, (id. at 1244,1273), and had formulated "conspiracies to obstruct justice, steal government property, burglarize, bug, harbor fugitives from justice, and commit and suborn perjury before the grand jury," (id. at n. 27 at 1258)~4

In a memorandum urging stiff sentences for the Scientologists federal prosecutors wrote:

" The crime committed by these defendants is of a breath and scope previously unheard of. No bureau, office, desk, or file was safe from their snooping and prying. No individual or organization was free from

----- 1 These materials also have been derived in substantial part from evidence submitted in the court briefs and appendices filed in Wollersheim v. Scientology in the California court system, Civ. No. B023193, (LASC No.C332827,) and at the U.S. Supreme Court, U.S. 89-1361, U.S. 89-1367.

2 See United States v. L. Ron Hubbard et al.,Crim. No. 78-401, D.C.D.C.(1979).

3.688 F.2d 1238 (D.C. Cir.1980) cert. den.456 U.S. 926 (1982).

~.For more examples of Scientology's continuous pattern of similar criminal behavior see, Vannier v. Superior Court of Los Angeles 32 Ca.3d 163 (1982), Church of Scientology of Cal. v. Cazares, [former mayor of Clearwater, Florida] 638 F.2d 1272 (4th Cir. 1981), Founding Church of Scientology v. Webster, [former Director of F.B.I.], 802 F.2d 1348 (D.C. Cir. 1986), Florida Bar v. Vannier 498 So.2d 896 (1986), Allard v. Church of Scientology of California 58 Cal. App. 3d (1976).

their despicable conspiratorial minds. The tools of their trade were miniature transmitters, lock picks, secret codes, forged credentials and any other device they found

necessary to carry out their conspiratorial schemes."

SCIENTOLOGY'S INTERNATIONAL CRIMINAL HISTORY

In England, the "Inquiry into the practice and effects of Scientology" prepared for the House of Commons in 1971 (The Foster Report), produced a ban on Scientology that lasted several years.

In 1977 Denmark, known for its tolerance, Scientology lost its protection contained in the criminal code of justice concerning the protection of religion. '

In 1982 the full Supreme Court of Victoria Australia ruled that Scientology was not a religion or religious institution but a sham. The court ruled Scientology was a body formed for an object that was illegal under criminal laws. '

In the mid 1980's France convicted L. Ron Hubbard in absentia for fraud. In 1988, in Milan Italy, 76 Scientologists were committed for trial charged with offenses from fraud, medical malpractice and criminal conspiracy to extort money, to unlawful detention.

In a massive raid in 1990, Spain arrested 71 of the top international leaders of Scientology on charges ranging from fraud to tax offenses. The charges alleged involvement in forgery of public documents, coercion, labor law violations, and illicit association.

On July 6, 1990, France arrested 6 of the top officials of Scientology in France for the illegal practice of medicine and fraud.

If one was observing only a one time or single occurrence of "renegade" criminal activity of one or more adherents, Scientology's criminal history could be less relevant. Here, though, these activities were a part of the secret written policies of the group.

As the FBI and IRS has repeatedly uncovered, Scientology's actions and policies were created, approved, and ordered by the highest levels of the organization. These are the day to day activities of Scientology, not "renegade" actions in spite of Scientology's never ending spewing of subsequent "damage control" cover stories.

"This is a criminal organization day in and day out. It makes Jim and Tammy, (Baker), look like kindergarten." So says Vivki Aznerand one of the six top executives in Scientology until her defection in 1987. '

-----I. From the Scientology case tried before the Copenhagen court in 1974 later upheld by the Eastern Circuit Court of Appeals in 1977.

2. "Board of Inquiry into Scientology" presented to both houses of parliament, Victoria, Australia. See Church of the New Faith v. Commissioner of Payroll Tax, (decided May 5, 1982). Also see the Anderson Report of 1965, Victoria, Australia.

3. Time magazine May 6, 1991.

17

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00003

Scientology has been labeled by trial judges "schizophrenic and paranoid"¹ and "corrupt, sinister, and dangerous." These descriptions were both accurate, but dangerously incomplete regarding Scientology's actual core nature.

Scientology has two separate parts and personalities. It has an inner and secret Scientology of substance, and an outer public Scientology of front and form.²

Scientology's schizophrenic organizational personality is consistent with the historic models of the inner and outer circle structure common to past political secret societies. From this inner secret SUBSTANCE, outer public FORM perspective Scientology's seemingly many incongruities finally become congruent.

The outer public Scientology can appear as a benign and intertwined mix of pop psychology, psychiatry, eastern philosophy, and a thick mantle of traditional-sounding but strained religious terminology and trappings.' The inner secret Scientology can be better understood by studying the many parallels of cosmology, policies, and practices of earlier political secret societies, societies like the Thule Gellerschaft Virl, Ninja and Thugee clans, and the

1. Judge Breckenridge in Church of Scientology v. Armstrong, No. C 420153 Cal. Super. CT. (1984).

2. Some past secret societies can be thought of as the forerunners of modern intelligence agencies. They are also notorious for setting up and disbanding front groups. The outer names or forms may appear to change but the inner substance, goals, and activities stay the same. Some front groups involved in either recruiting new members or covertly attacking adversaries for Scientology are: the Committee To Defend The First Amendment, the Hubbard Dianetics Foundation, the Citizens Commission On Human Rights, Narconon, the Committee On Public Health And Safety, the Task Force On Mental Retardation, the Gerus Society, the Dianetic Information Group, the Committee To Reinvolvement Ex-offenders, the National Commission for Law Enforcement And Social Justice, the Foundation For The Communication of Culture International, Doctors For Religious Liberty, Vanguard, April, (a pseudo anti cult organization), Alliance To Protect Religious Liberty, Committee For A Safe Environment, American Citizens For Honesty in Government, the Way to Happiness Foundation, the Whistle Blowers, HealthMed, Criminon, Applied Scholastics, Concerned Businessman's Association of America, and Sterling Management.

3. This inditing strain can be seen, in part, by reviewing Scientology's original publications with newer edited editions

and tracing how key definitions have been reworked to accommodate "the look and feel" of religious subject matter or where L. Ron Hubbard's controversial secular or political materials have been edited out.

18

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00004

Hashish Assassins.1

The goals of these earlier political secret societies were primarily concerned with getting or maintaining political power and wealth. The world view of these secret societies often involved a special elitism.

Several of these classes of secret societies had UFO or extraterrestrial cosmologies and world views confirming and bestowing upon them their "world historic destinies." Their secret society was the "only one" chosen to play critical, often hidden roles in current and future world events.' These mystical cosmologies imbued members with a sense of "privileged" and exclusive secret knowledge. Like its political secret society ancestors, the inner Scientology also has its own mystical cosmology.

"This universe is a rough universe. Its a deadly serious universe. Only the strong survive. Only the ruthless can own it. (From The History of Man by L Ron Hubbard, p.38.)

The inner circles of these political secret societies traditionally controlled the outer circles with outright lies, blackmail, deliberate misdirection, or more subtle deception. These deceptions were often achieved by withholding information of a privileged or secret initiatory nature until the individual had passed the appropriate loyalty or security tests.

Psychological coercion and physical terrorism were also day-today policies. The inner circle, where necessary, would use or sacrifice ignorant outer circle members or other lower level inner circle members as tools or deployable agents.

"When you move off a point of power, pay all your obligations on the nail, empower your friends completely and move off with your pockets full of artillery, potential blackmail on every erstwhile rival, unlimited funds in your private account and the addresses of experienced assassins and go live in Bulgaria and bribe the police....

So to live at all in the shadow or employ of a power you must yourself gather and use enough power to hold your own-without just nattering to the power to "kill Pete", in straight forward or more suppressive veiled

-----1.The Thule and Virl were two pre W.W.II German secret Societies. Many of the top Nazis who later created the political party and "religion" of National Socialism were important members. The Hashish Assassins played a secret key role in the political power balance of the Middle East for almost 600 years. Their organization is the origin for

our word assassin. The Thugee cult from which our modern word thug is derived was a secret society that challenged British political power in India.

2. An excellent and well documented reference book for the secret society model which also references Scientology is "The Occult and the Third Reich, by Dusty Skylar.

19

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00005

ways to him as these wreck the power that supports yours. He doesn't have to know all the bad news and if he's a power really he won't ask all the time, "What are all those dead bodies doing at the door?" And if you are clever, you never let it be thought HE killed them-that weakens you and also hurts the power source. "Well, boss, about all those dead bodies, nobody at all will suppose you did it. She over there, those pink legs sticking out, didn't like me." "Well," he'll say if he really is a power, "why are you bothering me with it if its done and you did it. Where's my blue ink?" Or, "Skipper three shore patrolmen will be along soon with your cook, Dober, and they'll want to tell you he beat up Simson." "Who's Simson?" He's a clerk in the office enemy downtown." "Good, when they've done it, take Dober down to the dispensary for any treatment he needs. Oh yes. Raise his pay."....

"... we all aren't on the stage with our names in lights, always push power in the direction of anyone on whose power you depend. It may be more money for the power, or more ease, or a snarling defense of the power to a critic, or even the dull thud of one of his enemies in the dark, or the glorious blaze of the whole enemy camp as a birthday surprise...."

Real powers are developed by tight conspiracies of this kind pushing someone up in whose leadership they have faith.1

Scientology's religious⁷ cloaking specifically helps give legal immunity to its dangerous' "Coercive persuasion"³ practices called

1. Above 2 quotes from the policy "The Responsibilities of Leaders" by L. Ron Hubbard. This policy in many ways again echoes and reinforces the "fair game" policy and attitude.

2. Reports of induced neurosis, psychosis, attempted suicide and alleged suicide related to auditing are frequent and common knowledge at high levels in the Scientology organization but they are suppressed. For more information on Scientology's use of coercive persuasion techniques see the included "Coercive Persuasion and Scientology" appendix.

Coercive persuasion or thought reform is a coordinated technology of gradually applied, coercive influence and behavioral control. Coercive persuasion acts to gradually

overcome the will without convincing the judgment. The victims are "unduly" influenced and lose their ability to make independent decisions or exercise an informed consent. Their defenses, cognition, values, attitudes, conduct, and ability to reason have been technologically undermined. For a more detailed technical definition of coercive

20

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00006

auditing. Auditing acts as an effective manufacturing and initiation system for the gradual step by step conversion of the new and naive outer circle members. It converts them first into unquestioning inner circle members and then into deployable agents or operatives.

Steve Fishman, who is now serving 5 years in jail for SEC violations, is an excellent example of the level of control such organizations try to exercise. In the May 6, 1991 issue of Time magazine, Fishman claims to have been a long time Scientology intelligence operative. He claims that to protect Scientology he was ordered to commit suicide by high level Scientology executives. He was told to take "a short term loss" to prevent church embarrassment and involvement in the disclosure of his Scientology directed SEC criminal activities.

(See following Fishman affidavit which has been included solely to highlight the similarities mentioned in this section. It is a little tedious in the beginning but clarifies itself starting arrounf page 4.)

AFFADAVIT OF STEVEN FISHMAN

I, STEVEN FISHMAN, am a former member of the Church of Scientology. I was on staff as the Fields Financial Planner of Fort Lauderdale, and later the Fields Financial Planner of Miami, between 1979-1988. I left the Church after a successful exit counseling attempt in August of 1990.

I am currently serving a five year sentence for mail fraud in connection with my position at the Church of Scientology. I am currently incarcerated at the Federal Correctional Institution of Tallahassee, Florida.

I became acquainted with the civil lawsuit of Larry Wollersheim during the fall of 1985. Herein are the circumstances within which I became familiar with the case:

During the summer and fall of 1985, I was being audited on my New Era Dianetics Grade V processing at the Mission of Fort Lauderdale and the Miami Organization of the Church of Scientology. Auditing is a form of spiritual counseling offered by the Church. My auditors were Nancy Witkowski in Fort Lauderdale and Leah Abady in Miami.

In New Era Dianetics, the preclear, or person getting audited, is directed to view mental image pictures of pain and unconsciousness which the preclear or parishioner has been led to believe existed in his "past track" or successive episodes

of past life experiences. The preclear is led to believe this through various mind control techniques, utilizing various forms of trance induction and hypnotic suggestion, namely the TRs or Training Routines,

-----...Continued...

persuasion and an explanation of its tactics, see appendix of same title in this document. Also see the Reply to Brief in Opposition in Wollersheim v. Church of Scientology U.S. 89-1361 cert. den. (19B9), appendix C, and Respondent's Supplemental Brief of November 16, 1990 in U.S. 89-1361, the optional "Coercive Persuasion and Scientology" appendix, section 3.

21

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00007

and in the latter case, through either "reverie", "anaten" or "boil-off", which are Scientology-defined phrases for specific conditions of hypnosis. This is done with the aid of an electropsy- chometer, or E-meter.

During-my specific experience with this New Era Dianetics (or NED) auditing, I was led to believe while under mind control that I had been the biological father of Jesus Christ, who was represented to me to be a very evil being, an enslaver of mankind who was given to violent rages and temper tantrums, and who was also a homosexual and molester of chi Idren. For five years (1985-1990) I believed that I had "pulled the evil Christ into my own universe" by having been sexually attracted to his mother (Mary) as a young man, and further that she became impregnated by virtue of the fact that each morning I would watch her bathe in a stream and having become aroused by watching her behind reeds (bushes), the semen (ejaculate) penetrated her via the movement of the current of the warm water in the stream.

I was directed toward other (suggested) memories which were indicated by my auditors who measured the truth or falsity of these "events" on the E-meter, including the crucifixion of Christ, where I had believed myself to be present, having been directed to look at mental image pictures in a reduced state of hypnotic awareness of my having hammered his left foot to the cross, and other scenes.

My viewpoint of Christ was that of Hubbard's himself, as evidenced on Saint Hill Special Briefing Course Tape #112, where in Hubbard stated that Christ died for his own sins.

During this period of my auditing, my hatred for Christ reached a point where I felt an enormous level of guilt for having fathered such a "degraded being" as he was called by my auditors Witkowski and Abady.

Further on in my auditing, after having sessions at the Flag Service Organization in Clearwater, Florida which validated or corroborated the results of the auditing in Miami and Fort Lauderdale, I was given further data my Ann Glushakow and Margaret Supak regarding who "Christ really was on the whole

track", or what the previous life cycles or incarnations of Christ were. At that point, at the order of Inspector General for Tech Ray Mithoff, I was given some OT (Operating Thetan) data which was normally not extended to someone who had not attested to the State of Clear. Under the supervision of two Class XII auditors, Richard Reese and John Eastment, and where my folder was personally Case Supervised by Ray Mithoff, I was allowed to see some confidential materials which were photocopies of L. Ron Hubbard's handwriting and pre-served in cellophane sheets. This data related to OT III, or the Wall of Fire, an advanced level in Scientology.

I learned that there had been an Emperor Xenu who had brought us here to earth in an attempt to solve overpopulation on another planet called Marcab, or the Marcab Confederacy. I had asked Richard Reese where this planet was, and he showed me a Technical Bulletin (typed, not handwritten, but marked Confidential), that explained that Marcab was the planet between Mars and Jupiter in our own solar system, which had been destroyed in a war or holocaust which involved the use of the hydrogen bomb, and that this planet was now a fragment of rocks in space known as the "asteroid belt."

22

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00008

Further, I was given data where at the time the Earth was known as "Teegeeack", and that we (all thetans or spiritual beings here or the aggregate population of the planet) were transported in clusters (packaged by the thousands together) and transported here in space ships that closely resembled DC-9 airplanes, and thereafter we were dropped in two volcanic areas, one of which was Las Palmas, and the other Hawaii. From there we dispersed and through various means, including going up through the evolutionary or genetic track (of picking up bodies), we populated the planet.

I was finally told that Xenu, who had been the most evil being of all, was toppled in a revolt in which L. Ron Hubbard participated as a "loyal officer" of the people. I was further told by Reese and via the handwritten document I was shown of Hubbard's that Xenu was trapped in an electronic mountaintop, where "he was to this very day."

After a rigorous Security Check on the E-Meter by Hans Stahli, who was the Qualifications Secretary of the Religious Technology Center, I was routed back to Ray Mithoff, and was told by Mithoff that the Emperor Xenu had many subsequent evil life cycles, and one of these was that of Christ. I had raised the question of how this possibly could have been true when the data in Hubbard's own hand indicated that Xenu was trapped in or on an electronic mountaintop, where he remained "to this very day." Mithoff explained that the body remained there, but Xenu, the thetan, had dropped the body and has created havoc as a chaos merchant on the planet ever since. The explanation made perfect sense to me at the time, as I knew from previous training and processing in Scientology that the body is nothing more than a vehicle which the thetan or spirit operates, much like one can drive a car, and then abandon it.

The above preface is relevant to this case, as I will now explain.

Mithoff revealed to me that having failed to take responsibility for "fathering Xenu when he was Christ", I had pulled in much pain and suffering into the physical universe. Further, that Christ was back, but this time, presenting the most dangerous threat to the only hope mankind had, namely, the Church of Scientology. Mithoff explained to me that Xenu / Christ had returned as Larry Wollersheim, and ~ needed to handle him and thus rectify my overt act or high crime that I had caused by virtue of the fact that I had fathered Christ as an illegitimate son in that lifetime.

My hatred for Xenu Christ was now fixated and personalized against Larry Wollersheim. I felt compelled to destroy him, for I believed that he was the reason for all of humanity's ills and SORROW.

I had been very active in the Guardian's Office of Scientology, working under Fred Hare, and in 1981, having destroyed the legal case of an ex-member suing the Church by the name of Lavenda (Van Schaick) Dukoff. After the Guardian's Office was renamed the Office of Special Affairs in 1983, I continued to work as a OSA Missionaire, under various Church officials, including Lyman Spurlock, who had participated in various covert operations, one of which was the recovery of some stolen documents (archival records of L. Ron Hubbard dating back to 1947-1948), which during said recovery, Lavenda's sister Lisa was raped.

It was Lyman Spurlock who gave me specific data on Larry Wol-

23

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00009

lersheim. I was told that he lived in Aspen, Colorado, and that his parents owned a steak grill or coffee shop in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. **The Office of Special Affairs, under the direction at that time of Edward Parkin and Lynn Farny, had ordered the Permanent Off Loading of Larry Wollersheim. Permanently Off-Loading someone means killing or murdering them, although we referred to the practice as "an enforced abandonment of the neck-up!"** and other Scientological euphemisms. It was Lyman Spurlock who told me that the Office of Special Affairs had ordered the Permanently OffLoading of Wollersheim, and under the mind control influence I was under at the time, I fully agreed with the order, and further, I wanted to be an active participant in it.

Lyman told me that the Office of Special Affairs needed someone with "great confront", (someone who could confront things more than other people were capable of doing), who could "handle" Wollersheim. The Office of Special Affairs had difficulty in locating Wollersheim at his home in Aspen, but concluded that at certain times of the year, such as on the birthday of his father and/or mother, or at Christmas, it was likely that Larry Wollersheim would be visiting his parents in

Milwaukee. Further, Lyman Spurlock indicated that as soon as he knew from Office of Special Affairs operatives in the Milwaukee area who had the home and coffee shop of his parents under constant surveillance that Larry Wollersheim was visiting his father, Larry Sr., then that would be the best time for Larry Wollersheim to be permanently Off-Loaded. Lyman wanted me to relocate to the Milwaukee area and apply as a waiter, cashier, or other food service worker in Larry Sr.'s coffee shop, and if that were not possible to frequent the location as a "regular" and gain a foothold into that scene as a plant. Lyman told me that the best way to handle Larry Wollersheim was to "Pixie-Dust him"; or have him given doses of cyanide poisoning. Lyman also had a very strong hatred for Larry's mother, whose name was Elinor. I remember her name because it was the same name as one of my supervisors, Ellie Bolger, the Fields Financial Planner International. Lyman wanted Elinor to be Pixie-Dusted as well, which was supposed to serve as a means to localize the incident and deflect any responsibility away from the Office of Special Affairs. There was another family member named Cindy who he disliked, but I do not recall how she was related to Larry. It may have been his sister, although I cannot recall more about her. I expressed an eagerness and a willingness to do the Operation, although ~ never was told what the name of the Operation was.

However, I was not called upon to fly to Milwaukee, and two years later, I had asked my Ethics Officer, Dori Hare (Fred Hare's wife, as Fred Hare later became the Mission Holder of Fort Lauderdale), why ~ was never asked to handle Wollersheim. Dori Hare told me that I could not go anywhere when I was having ethics trouble of my own, plus, she did not want my production (of securities class action lawsuit claims) to be interfered with. I was also a telex/data entry operator for the Flag Banking Office Network External, later incorporated as part of the INCOMM Computer Network of Scientology, and I was one out of three people authorized to send and receive on the INCOMM network in connection with a global tax evasion and money laundering scheme known as Operation Paper Chase, so it was not possible, according to Dori Hare, for me to be

24

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00010

away from the Miami Org and/or Mission of Fort Lauderdale for any extended length of time. I also was having difficulties with the Church because of a PTS situation (Potential Trouble Source) occurring because my own parents had become antagonistic to Scientology as a result of conversations with a psychologist who was a friend of the family named Uwe Geertz, and who later served as an expert witness in my criminal case, along with Dr. Margaret Singer and Dr. Richard Ofshe, notable experts on thought reform and specifically on the Church of Scientology's use of mind control techniques.

I was very offended that despite the fact that Lyman Spurlock had offered me the chance to kill Wollersheim, I was never invited to go to Milwaukee and do it. I argued that I was the most suitable for the job as I had been the father of Wollersheim when he was Christ. I further reminded Dori Hare

that quantities of cyanide (provided to us by an employee of the American Cyanamid Corporation who was a Scientologist) was readily available at the warehouse in Miami under the custody of Warehouse Manager Charlie Fox, as well as the Flag Service Organization Warehouse, under the custody of Flag Warehouse Manager Bruce Ferguson. Nevertheless, Dori Hare told me that until my production was up and my own ethics were handled (with regard to my antagonistic parents), I was not going to be allowed to handle Wollersheim at all. I suggested to Dori that I would be willing to blow up an airplane that Wollersheim was on as a passenger, if she would provide me with that data when the Office of Special Affairs discovered when he was traveling on a plane in connection to his legal case against the Church. Dori Hare told me that too many innocent people would die along with Larry Wollersheim if I did that, and then I would be committing an overt act against these innocent people. She said that although Wollersheim deserved such a fate, that the airplane method was not the way to go about it.

During the intervening year of 1986, on or around August 23, 1986, I went to Los Angeles to participate in the "Battle of Los Angeles", or the Anti-Wollersheim Crusade for Religious Freedom, as it was called. During that time, I worked under Deborah Truax, who was attached to Golden Era Productions, raising money for the Defense Fund by calling Scientologists all over the country. Although I raised \$16,800 in contributions, my stat for that endeavor was "Emergency" because I failed to meet my quota of \$25,000, which in retrospect was an impossible amount to raise during the time period allotted. Deborah Truax admonished me and said that had my "conf front" been sufficient and my "postulates" positive enough, I could have raised that amount from just one person alone.

To compensate for this failure, I was asked to help her in the covert operations which occurred in the evening. On one occasion I raided the trash can of Charles O'Reilly, who was Wollersheim's attorney at the time. I found nothing of value during that raid. During the night, I was also ordered by Deborah to call the home of O'Reilly as well as Psychiatrist Louis Jolyon (Jolly) West, who was assisting Wollersheim in his civil case against the Church. I was told to scream and threaten whoever answered the telephone. I was told by Bridge Publications Sales Manager Jon Stachelrodt that a campaign to harass Attorney O'Reilly, and another attorney named George Rosenberg, until their lives were made so miserable that they would "just give up in apathy."

25

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00011

Later in 1988, Commander Kurt Weiland of the Office of Special Affairs had ordered "Wollersheim completely individuated from his attorney(s)", and this was communicated to me through the Director of Special Affairs of Miami, Humberto Fontana, who had been given this data at a confidential OSA briefing at Flag.

Humberto Fontana had a group of us write letters to Charles O'Reilly at that time, telling him he was a fool for staying on the case because Larry Wollersheim was never going to settle no

matter what, and he (O'Reilly) was never going to get paid. The letters were sent to O'Reilly somewhere in Santa Monica, California, and this was a different address from the location on Figueroa Street in Los Angeles where I had searched the garbage during the Crusade. These letters were sent to O'Reilly via remailing services which we used throughout the country. We did not identify ourselves as Scientologists, but rather as relatives of Wollersheim who were angry that "Larry didn't use his common sense and settle the thing." Some of the staff members who were mustered to write the letters were Linda Mac Phee, the Citizens Commission on Human Rights Representative; Fran Hardy, the Public Executive Secretary of Fort Lauderdale, and Toni Levy, the Personnel Procurement Officer of the Hubbard Communications Office in Miami. We sent the letters to O'Reilly via remailing services at the Mail Center of Chicago at 323 South Franklin Boulevard, as well as other locations we had access to in Gretna, Louisiana; St. Louis Missouri; and Fullerton, California. We were never told that the campaign was successful, as I only recently learned that O'Reilly was no longer representing Larry Wollersheim, although I do not know whether our "Individuation Campaign" was the precipitating factor in it.

After we lost the "Battle of Los Angeles" and Wollersheim had received a \$30,000,000 verdict from the jury, the effort to overturn the decision through covert operations was stepped up as the case was being prepared to go before the appeals court. One method that I am aware of was to move money out of the country using such corporate shells such as Theta Management, ASSISCO, the Author Family Trust, the Church of Spiritual Technology (which manages the gold storage facilities and the RPF Estates Section used to accumulate profits (gold bullion) from Operation Paper Chase; as well as other lesser known entities such as the Church of Scientology Religious Trust, which recently became the successor in interest to the Author Family Trust, as control is now completely under the control of Religious Technology Center Chairman David Miscavige. Please evidence a document (attached hereto) which describes the actual holdings of the Church of Scientology, as directly quoted from International Scientology News, Issue 24, which was printed by the Church of Scientology at the end of 1989:

"In this decade (1979-1989) the VSD (Value of Services Delivered) has been running routinely at new highest ever levels and has expanded by over 800% with 1.1 billion dollars (emphasis added) of Value of Services Delivered."

Nevertheless, the Church conducted a deliberate campaign to understate its assets to the Court in the Wollersheim case, in very much the same way as it understates income to the Internal Revenue Service on a routine basis.

In March of 1988, as a matter of course in the performance of my post, I worked with Flag Banking Officer Leona Grimm in transfer-

ring funds to accounts maintained by the Church under the name of Theta Management at the Bank Leu in Lausanne, Switzerland; Bank Leumi in Tel-Aviv, Israel; the Ziraat Bank of Ankara, Turkey; the Indosuez Bank and the Banque du Commerce et Credite Internationale both of Luxembourg, and the Foreign Commerce Bank of Vienna, Austria. I did the journals and reported the stats to the Flag Banking Officer International, David Gaiman, while the actual journals and transfers of funds were done electronically by wire at Flag. Leona Grimm signed off on all of my entries on the INCOMM computer. She had mentioned on two occasions that there was an urgency to get the records completed because of "mocked -up" (f a l s e) reports required to be sent in to the Appeals Court in the Wollersheim Case. Our entries on INCOMM were forwarded to Carol Martiano at the Office of Special Affairs in Los Angeles, and then she in turn forwarded the completed and authorized documents to Larry Heller, who was the Church attorney arguing the case in California on our behalf.

The above Affidavit is true and correct to the best of my knowledge.

STEVEN FISHMAN STATE OF FLORIDA COUNTY OF LEON

Before me personally appeared STEVEN FISHMAN, known to me to be the person described in and who executed the aforementioned affidavit, and signed the document in my presence~

Witness my hand and official seal this 17th of June, 1991, at Tallahassee, Florida.

Cynthia G. Rona NOTARY PUBLIC, STATE OF FLORIDA

My Commission Expires: December 12, 1994

Another important element to these previous political secret societies is the use of the ancestral processes of modern coercive persuasion as well as hypnosis and trance producing secret initiatory rites and exercises. These elements help isolate and desensitize the individual, build blind obedience, and develop a ruthless and fanatical will to execute the secret society's goals.

"When someone enrolls consider he or she has joined up for the duration of the universe. Never permit an "open minded" approach. . . . If they 're enrolled, they 're aboard, and if they're aboard they're here on the same terms as the rest of us. Win or die in the attempt.... We're not playing some minor game in Scientology....The whole agonized future of this planet, every Man, Woman, and Child on it, and your own destiny for the next endless trillions of years depends on what you do here and now with and in Scientology.

This is a deadly serious activity. And if we miss getting out of the trap now, we may never again have another chance.

endless trillions of years of the past. Don't muff it now
because it seems unpleasant or unsocial to do Seven, Eight,
Nine, and Ten."1 Do them and we'll win "

Without the various hypnotic and trance inducing initiatory levels intertwined into Scientology's cosmological cloak, Scientology's substantive and actual secret activities and motivations would become visible, long before the covert application of their coercive persuasion programs have had the opportunity to undermine the judgment, clarity~ and reasoning of their lower level or "outer circle" new members.

"Psychiatrists say these sessions can produce a drug like mind controlled euphoria that keeps the customers coming back for more.

Scientology's secret inner cosmology also cloaks the ignoble intentions of Scientology's founder, L. Ron Hubbard, to possess wealth, power and make other people his political and economic "slaves." 4 The secret inner cosmology cloaks the actual mental state, qualities, and motivations of L. Ron Hubbard. Hubbard at various times has been described as megalomaniacal and a psychological liar.S

"We are not in the business of being good boys and girls. We're in the business of going free and getting the org production roaring. Nothing else is of any

-----1.r"7. Hammering out of existence incorrect technology, 8. knocking out incorrect applications, 9. closing the door on any possibility of incorrect technology, 10. closing the door on incorrect applications."] From Hubbard Communication Office Policy Letter "Keeping Scientology Working," the most repeatedly studied policy in Scientology. Besides new member indoctrination, points seven through ten find broad application and interpretation in Scientology's intelligence actions toward perceived mental health competitors or other adversaries.

2. For complete details regarding Scientology's auditing\coercive persuasion process see the "Coercive Persuasion and Scientology," appendix materials in Respondent's Supplemental Brief of November 16, 1991, U.S. 89-1361, Appendix 3.

3. Time magazine May 6, 1991.

4. From Time magazine May 6, 1991. "All men are your slaves," is a quotation from L Ron Hubbard's personal affirmations as disclosed in the Armstrong v. Scientology case.

5. See Church of Scientology of California v. Armstrong No. C.420153 Cal. Super. CT. (1984). Scientology settled out of court with Armstrong for approximately \$800,000.00 and then initiated sealing the court records.

interest then to Ethics but (a) getting tech in...and (b) getting production up and the org rolling along...In short a staff member can get away with murder so long as his statistic is up and can't sneeze without a chop if its down...Ethics must use all org discipline only in view of the production statistic of the staff member involved." (HCO policy letter of September 1, 1965 Issue VII.)

"The purpose of ethics is to remove counter intentions from the environment ." (HCO pol i cy letter of June 18, 1968.)

In Scientology the creation of a fanatical "will to triumph" is reminiscent of another ruthless inner circle. In spite of overwhelming factual evidence, the top leaders of the Nazis continued to refuse to believe the war was lost. Isolated mentally and physically, they even continued to issue battle plans and orders to nonexistent armies.

The allies literally had to fight the Nazi leaders to the near last Berlin bunker, but not before 50 million people first had to die. History has painfully taught us the result of secret conspiratorial fanaticism.

Coercive political secret societies cut off their members from any opposing facts or opinions. They subvert rational and logical thought. Unfortunately, when a society becomes dominated or strongly influenced by such extreme groups or ideologies, only the most extreme deterrents historically have had any correctional or deterrent effect.~

THE CRIMINAL GOALS OF SCIENTOLOGY

Scientology is, at its inner essence, an intelligence agency 2 and a political secret society.

"In my opinion the church has one of the most effective intelligence operations in the U.S. rivaling even that of the F.B.I." From Ted Gunderson a former head of the F.B.I's Los Angeles office.

-----1.This is not to suggest that the inner Scientology and the former Nazi party are identical or somehow linked. There are although many similarities in policies, tactics, and esoteric goals, more than enough to validate model parallels and comparison.

2.Scientology operates an intelligence division formerly called the G.O., now called the OSA. It is smaller in scope and similar in operation to the C.T.A., K.G.B., or Mossad. In the training manuals for Scientology's intelligence operations seized by the F.B.I., L. Ron Hubbard states that Scientology has the best intelligence service in existence today. For more detailed information on Scientology's intelligence agency, see "A Piece of Blue Sky" by John Atack, part 5, "The Guardian's Office." Also see the documents seized by the FBI concerning the G.O., its training manuals, and its covert operations manuals.

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00015

For the liability shielding benefits of religious protection Scientology uses a veneer of extraterrestrial cosmology consisting in part of alien space wars and the creation of a new superman, the Homo Novis, the Clear, and the Operating Thetan, (OT).'

For the privileged inner initiates there is even a cleverly created secret adaptation of traditional and science fictionesque neo-satanism. 3 Scientology's cloaking cosmology helps to secure both undeserved first amendment religious immunities for its experimentation with thought reform and is part of an absolutely essential internal cover story to the newer outer circle members. It covers the organization's motivations behind its criminal and antisocial actions and policies, and its actual anti-religious, political power, wealth, and control goals.

"The vital targets on which we must invest most of our time are: (T1) Depopularizing the enemy to the point of obliteration. (T2) Taking over the control or allegiance of the heads or proprietors of all news media. (T3) Taking over the control or allegiance of key political figures. (T4) Taking over the control or allegiance of those who monitor international finance and shifting them to a less precarious standard"....

"Intelligence is not concentrating on what they should be - the WFMH, [World Federation of Mental Health] the NAMH [National Association of Mental Health] These are the groups I want destroyed." From the Hubbard Communications Office Policy Letter of 14 Jan. 1969, " Thus in the case of Scientology Orgs [organizations] one should attack with the end view of taking over the whole field of mental health."

"Our war has been forced to become, to take over absolutely the field of mental healing on the planet in all forms." "Our only justification in doing these things is that Scientology is the only game where everybody wins...."

In a way not altogether unlike the Nazi bullies who over-

----- 1. Time magazine May 6, 1991.

2.The preceding three Scientology terms refer to previously "unattainable" new evolutionary states in mankind, which only can be attained through Scientology.

3. See the "Another Secret Scientology Section or the Respondent's Supplemental Brief of November 16, 1990 U.S. 89-1361 appendix 2, "The Secret Scientology," for restricted or sealed details on Scientology's secret cosmology.

4.The preceding quotation from "Targets", "Guardian Order 060971," and other documents seized by the F.B.I. on its authorized search of Scientology's headquarters.

\App 2 - Criminality\Page.00016

whelmed the German judicial system, Scientology's fanatical tactics threaten the critical balance necessary to protect our justice process.

The chapters will put more hard documentation behind these harsh statements.

=====
If this is a copyrighted work, you are acknowledging by receipt of this document from FACTNet that on the basis of reasonable investigation, you have not been to obtain a copy elsewhere at a fair price, and that you are and will abide by the following copyright warning.

WARNING CONCERNING COPYRIGHT RESTRICTIONS: The copyright law of the United States (Title 17, United States Code) governs the making of photo copies or other reproductions of copyrighted material. Under certain conditions specified by law, libraries and archives are authorized to furnish a photocopy or other reproduction. One of these specified conditions is that the photocopy or reproduction is not to be "used for any purpose other than private study, scholarship, or research." If a user makes a request for, or later uses, a photocopy or reproduction for purposes in excess of "fair use," that user may be liable for copyright infringement.

FACTNet reserves the right to refuse to accept an order for copying or other duplication, or delivery of copied or duplicated material if in its judgment, fulfillment of the order would involve violation of copyright law.

CARD CATALOG ENTRY

! 3 FILENAME OF TEXT FILE: E:\PCB\SCN\FILES\GENERAL\APP2A.TXT

DOS FILENAME OF IMAGE FILES:

ADMINISTRATIVE CODE:

SECURITY CODE:

DISTRIBUTION CODE:

NAME FOR BBS:

SORT TO:

CONTRIBUTOR:

LOC. OF ORIG:

NOTES:

For additional verification see image files contained in the file with same name and .ZIP extension.

UPDATED ON:

UPDATED BY:

=====

William T. Drescher
23679 Calabasas Road, Suite 338
Calabasas, California 91302
(818) 591-0039

Michael Lee Hertzberg
740 Broadway
New York, New York 10003
(212) 982-9870

Attorneys for Non-Party

DAVID MISCAVIGE

UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT
FOR THE CENTRAL DISTRICT OF CALIFORNIA

CHURCH OF SCIENTOLOGY
INTERNATIONAL, a California Non-
Profit Religious Organization,

vs .

Plaintiff,

STEVEN FISHMAN and UWE GEERTZ,

Defendants.

CASE NO. CV 91-6426 HLH(Tx)

DECLARATION OF DAVID MISCAVIGE

I, DAVID MISCAVIGE, declare and say:

1. I am over 18 years of age and a resident of the State of California. I have personal knowledge of the matters set forth in this declaration and, if called upon as a witness I could and would competently testify thereto.

2. I am not a party in the above-referenced case. nor am I affiliated in any corporate capacity with the plaintiff, Church of Scientology International ("CSI"). I make this declaration for several reasons. First, until January 4, 1994, the date on which I was informed that my deposition had been ordered in this case by Magistrate Judge Tassopoulos, I had no idea that I would be required to testify in this case. I was never served with any subpoena for such testimony, I have never had any contact whatsoever with either defendant,

and I had nothing whatsoever to do with this case until now. In fact, it was not until January 6, 1994, after my deposition had been ordered, that I first read the outrageous papers filed by Geertz's counsel when he sought to have my deposition ordered. Second, upon reading those papers, I discovered that Geertz's counsel made arguments to the Magistrate Judge that gave her the absolutely false impression that I was evading service of subpoena. It caused me great concern to learn that the Magistrate Judge had asked, "Why has Mr. Miscavige avoided service?" I did no such thing, and were it not for the baseless allegations which Geertz's counsel proffered, I believe the Magistrate Judge would instead have asked Geertz's counsel, "Has Mr. Miscavige been served?" The truthful answer to that question is "No." Third, my lawyers' efforts to arrange for my deposition to be taken have been rebuffed by Geertz's counsel, who, at the same time, is threatening to move for a contempt citation against me for not appearing at a deposition he has refused to schedule. It is inconceivable to me that Geertz's counsel can seriously contend that I am to blame for a deposition not going forward when he has refused to depose me. Finally, in the course of these proceedings, Geertz's Counsel, Robert Vaughn Young and Stacy Young have made a number of allegations about me and about the Scientology religion which require a response, so there can be no doubt that those allegations are false.

3. I have read the vile declarations filed by Vaughn and Stacy Young in this case. It is clear to me that the false allegations they have filed have been offered solely for the purpose of making me the centerpiece of this litigation, and that their motivation is to forward a litigation tactic of harassment to the point of a hoped-for default by the only plaintiff to this action, CSI. The foregoing is based on the falsity of the claims they have made, my personal knowledge that both of these individuals are not qualified to testify to the matters they have addressed by declaration, and because I have seen the same litigation tactics used before in instances where Vaughn Young would have learned this "technique." Therefore, this declaration is submitted to demonstrate that I have no knowledge of the defendants in this case, to set the record straight concerning the false allegations of Vaughn and Stacy Young, and to comply as fully with the court order concerning my deposition as Geertz's counsel's actions permit, since Geertz's counsel has declined all opportunities to do so. I also submit this declaration because I feel the Court has been poisoned into believing that I have had some role in this litigation by the statements of the Youngs and counsel for Geertz, to which I have neither responded nor even had the opportunity to respond.

BACKGROUND

4. I have been a practicing member of the Scientology religion since 1971. In 1976, I joined staff of the Church of Scientology of California (and the Sea Organization -- the Scientology religious order). During my tenure in this corporation, I held many positions. In 1977, I had the opportunity to work directly with L. Ron Hubbard in many

different capacities. In 1978, Mr. Hubbard was engaged in the production of Scientology films which had the purpose of training Scientology counselors (called "auditors") in the practice of Scientology. During this time I was the Chief Cameraman. Later, I worked directly with Mr. Hubbard as a member of the Commodore's Messenger Organization ("CMO"), which duties consisted of assisting Mr. Hubbard in whatever activities he was engaged in. The functions are best described as an assistant. Later, when Mr. Hubbard went into seclusion to continue his researches on Dianetics and Scientology, and to engage in his own writings, I became part of a newly formed CMO organization, CMO International.

5. CMO International's role was to see that the management of the Church operated in accordance with Scientology policy and technology. The title of my position was Action Chief. In short, this post was responsible for missionary activities of the Church, where personnel from the Mother Church would travel to different parts of the world to see to the proper operation of various Church activities and to take corrective action where necessary. The types of missions I generally supervised were those that saw to the correct functioning of the Church management and the correction thereof.

6. From the beginning of 1982 until March of 1987, I was Chief Executive Officer and later Chairman of the Board of Author Services, Inc. ("ASI"), a California corporation which managed the personal, business, and literary affairs of L. Ron Hubbard. Later in this declaration, I describe how I came to that position.

7. Since March of 1987, I have been Chairman of the Board of Religious Technology Center ("RTC"), a California non-profit religious corporation recognized as tax exempt under Section 501(c)(3) of the Internal Revenue Code. RTC is not part of Church management, nor is it involved in the daily affairs of various Church of Scientology organizations or missions. RTC ensures that the trademarks of Dianetics and Scientology, and the technology they represent, are properly used around the world. It exists to see that Dianetics and Scientology technology is safeguarded, is in good hands, and is properly used.

8. RTC was formed with the specific purpose of seeing that the religion of Scientology was kept pure and true to the source materials of the religion. In fact, a major reason for its formation was to have such a Church organization that performed these functions in a capacity entirely separate from the actual management of the various Churches and Missions of Scientology. Not only is RTC not involved in the management of the international hierarchy of Scientology churches, but its very existence and performance of its true functions depends on the fact that it is NOT part of Church management. The authority of the Religious Technology Center stems from the ownership of the trademarks of Dianetics and Scientology. In brief, RTC's maintenance of these trademarks is threefold:

A) ensuring that when something is represented as Dianetics or Scientology, that it actually is;

B) seeing that any organization representing itself as Dianetics or Scientology (and using those names), while actually being something entirely different, is prevented from doing so; and

C) seeing that anyone offering Scientology, but calling it something else (a name other than Dianetics or Scientology) is prevented from doing so.

I could give various such examples where actions listed in B) and C) have actually occurred, although it is not necessary here. Suffice it to say that when such has occurred, RTC has acted, with litigation when necessary, and has been able to uphold the proper use of the marks in every instance.

9. As Chairman of the Board, the most senior position in RTC, I am uniquely interested in the standard application of the Scripture of Scientology as detailed in Hubbard Communications Office Policy Letters (HCO PLs) and Hubbard Communications Office Bulletins (HCOBs) and the spoken words of Mr. Hubbard on the subjects of Dianetics and Scientology as recorded on audio tape, video, film and, in some cases, written transcriptions of these materials. I inspect and correct departures from the standard application of the Scripture of the religion. I also ensure that any attempted perversion of the technology of Dianetics and Scientology is rapidly dealt with, to keep the religion pure so that all people may benefit from the application of Mr. Hubbard's breakthroughs in the fields of the mind, the spirit and life.

10. In the course of my duties I travel widely. I often appear at Church events and briefings which serve to keep Scientologists around the world aware of the widespread application of Mr. Hubbard's writings. In all such appearances, my position as Chairman of the Board of RTC is known, as is its distinction from actual Church management officials of CSI. I also oversee the affairs of the Religious Technology Center in its function of verifying that the source writings of the religion are kept pure. This specifically includes the verification that the materials representing themselves as being Dianetics and Scientology are in fact that, and that they honestly reflect the source writings of the religion by L. Ron Hubbard. I also oversee RTC's function of assuring that the trademarks of Dianetics and Scientology are legally registered and kept current in over 190 countries around the world.

11. Neither RTC nor I has any corporate authority over any Scientology church, including CSI. CSI is the Mother Church of the Scientology religion and has been since its inception in 1981. As such, CSI is responsible for the activities commensurate with such a role, including the ecclesiastical management of Churches, dissemination and propagation of the faith and defense of its activities, including external and legal affairs. All of the foregoing facts were submitted to and thoroughly reviewed by the Internal Revenue Service prior to the recent recognition of the tax-exempt status of CSI, RTC and a host of other Church corporations and entities.

FAILURE TO SERVE SUBPOENA

12. Apparently Geertz's counsel made some attempts to serve me with a deposition subpoena in Los Angeles in December of 1993, when I was away from California on business in the United Kingdom and Washington, D.C. I keep a busy schedule that requires extensive travel in the course of handling a wide range of ecclesiastical duties, and my schedule has nothing to do with the presence or absence of process servers. In January, I was away on business in Clearwater, Florida and Washington, D.C. In Washington, I met with the head of Interpol, Raymond Kendall, on one of the days that Geertz's counsel unilaterally set for my deposition. This meeting had been arranged for more than a month and since this individual was traveling all the way from Interpol headquarters in Europe, it was hardly something I could cancel. During that same week, and on another day arbitrarily set for my deposition, I met with IRS officials in a similarly pre-arranged meeting. In fact, I was only home for approximately 25 days in all of 1993. I was simply not in the State of California during the entire time in which service attempts on me were apparently being made. I understand this fact was made known to the Magistrate Judge in this case and later to the Court. To this day, I have never received a subpoena in this case.

13. Any suggestion that I try to avoid giving testimony is just false. In May of 1992, I testified at a legal proceeding in Toronto, Canada, although there was no legal means to compel my testimony. I testified for four full days in the summer of 1993 in Church of Scientology International v. Eli Lilly. et al., a case pending in federal court in Washington, D.C. There are over 1100 pages of deposition transcript that comprise that deposition, with very little in the way of objections or colloquy. I did so because I knew my testimony was needed and relevant. In 1990, I was deposed for two full days in Bent Corydon v. Church of Scientology International. In that instance, I was "rewarded" for appearing by having plaintiff's counsel serve me with various subpoenas in other disrelated matters. In both Lilly and Corydon, the opposition first attempted to notice my deposition while concurrently alleging that I would "refuse to appear." In each instance I was forced to refute such nonsense and in fact did appear. To claim that I evade service or avoid being deposed or otherwise avoid giving testimony is nonsense on its face.

14. I want the Court to be aware that upon learning that my deposition had been ordered by the Magistrate Judge on January 4, 1994 and upon reading the allegations that apparently led to that order, which I first read on January 6, 1994, I consulted with my counsel in this matter, who advised that I seek the Court's review of the Magistrate Judge's order concerning my deposition. At the same time, I also instructed my counsel that in spite of the fact that I had no knowledge of the issues raised in this case, and in spite of the lack of any service of a subpoena on me, and in spite of the fact, as noted above, I was to be out of town for much of January, counsel should try to make arrangements for my deposition to be taken, should the Court not reverse the Magistrate Judge's order. Efforts to make such

arrangements commenced on January 10, 1994 and continued through February 4, 1994. I am informed that Geertz's counsel was not willing to discuss a mutually acceptable date for my testimony, particularly at the end of that period, when Geertz's counsel declined even to propose a date for my deposition. In the meantime, while refusing to depose me, he threatens me with contempt for not having been deposed. I am convinced that this entire tactic of attempting to bring me into a case where my only involvement stems from this pursuit of my testimony, is for the purpose of harassment and to forward a litigation tactic of avoiding litigation of the actual case by use of abusive and irrelevant discovery tactics.

15. As a result, I feel I should make whatever effort I can to set the record straight on many of the false and inflammatory allegations that have been injected into this case. Therefore, I am using this written declaration to inform the Court of what my testimony would have been. I also am making my testimony available, because of my great concern that my name has been attacked in such a way that the Court has made rulings regarding my appearance based entirely on falsehoods presented by Geertz's counsel and Vaughn and Stacy Young.

NO KNOWLEDGE OF DEFENDANTS

16. I first heard the name Steven Fishman in the summer of 1990, when it was brought to my attention that someone by that name had been sentenced to prison for mail fraud and obstruction of justice and that in the course of being sentenced, he had referred to me by name and it had been alleged that illegal acts he had committed were as a result of Fishman being "implanted" and caused pain by inserting BIC pens in his penis and forcing him to smell human feces. As I had never heard of Fishman and because the allegations were such tabloid rot, I assumed this was some new form of "insanity defense" and that Fishman had picked my name out of the press or something. I never thought about the matter again, until 1991, when I read the 8 page cover story in Time Magazine concerning CSI in the May 6, 1991 edition. At no time, either before or since I read their names in that magazine, have I met with, spoken to, communicated with or otherwise had any contact or communication of any kind with either Geertz or Fishman. It was when I read that article that I first heard the name Uwe Geertz.

17. Geertz has submitted copies of purported correspondence from defendant Steven Fishman to Church members making reference to me as a participant in Fishman's mail fraud crimes. These references to me are pure fiction. Indeed, I have been informed that CSI has filed with the Court an unrebutted declaration of a typewriter expert who concluded that these letters could not have been created on the dates claimed by Fishman.

18. Other than the falsified documents of a convicted felon, the defendants have identified no other "evidence" that I even knew Fishman, much less ordered or condoned crimes for which he was imprisoned. Instead, Geertz has submitted two

vicious declarations, from Vaughn and Stacy Young, which attack and vilify me personally without reference to any issue in this case. Most significantly, neither of the Young's ever suggests that they ever heard me or any other senior official in the Scientology religion mention Steven Fishman or Uwe Geertz in their presence. At no time does either one even suggest that they know anything that connects me to any issue in this case. The reason they have failed to do so is clear: they have no such evidence of my involvement with Fishman or Geertz because no such evidence exists.

19. Exemplifying the unsupportable, irrelevant and malicious nature of Vaughn Young's personal assault on me is his false and repugnant insinuation that I was involved with the death of my mother-in-law, Mary Florence Barnett. Not only is there no evidence to support this claim by Young, but there is clear evidence to the contrary. With the reports of the coroner and the medical examiner's investigator, and with the deposition of the medical examiner taken by Geertz's counsel at hand -- all to the unanimous, unequivocal conclusion that Ms. Barnett died from self-inflicted gunshots -- Young has the temerity to suggest that I should be investigated to determine what he calls my role in that tragic suicide. With complete disdain for the facts and no regard whatsoever for any sense of decency, Young has taken a personal tragedy in my family's life, the suicide of my mother-in-law, and attempted to make this an issue in this lawsuit by twisting it to imply non-existent wrongdoing on my part. I not only had nothing to do with this tragic incident, but Vaughn Young's gratuitous embellishment that I ordered the matter "hushed up" is equally false. My only association with this tragedy was to console my wife who was understandably emotionally traumatized and grief stricken. Vaughn Young's effort to exploit this tragedy is malicious in and of itself, but his innuendo and attempts to recast the incident, despite the uncontroverted evidence as to the true cause of Ms. Barnett's death, show the depths to which he is willing to sink.

20. At this point, I have stated all I know of Steve Fishman and Uwe Geertz and anything that could possibly be relevant to this case. However, Vaughn and Stacy Young have taken it upon themselves to introduce into this case their version of my history with the Church. I cannot understand the relevance of this under any circumstances, but since counsel has now refused to take my deposition while concurrently leveling threats, I feel I am forced to give a brief history of what actually occurred to be in compliance with the Court's order if such is considered relevant, and to show in proper context how Vaughn and Stacy Young are simply incapable of competently testifying to events they have "described" in their declarations.

HISTORY OF FALSE ALLEGATIONS

21. False allegations leveled against me in the context of litigation or in the media are nothing new. I raise this point only so that the Court will understand that the sort of scurrilous personal attack on me launched by Geertz's counsel and Vaughn Young is the latest in a pattern of such attacks

in litigation over the years. I recognize that it is not uncommon for leaders of organizations and movements to be subjected to such attacks. I can only assume that I am attacked because I am visible as the ecclesiastical leader of the Scientology religion. I note that I am the ecclesiastical leader of the religion, not the Church. The mischaracterization of my role made by the editors of Premiere magazine in an editorial note cannot convert me from the leader of the religion to the head of the Church. Neither can the imprecise use of language by Ted Koppel on ABC's Nightline Show. Both of those erroneous designations are examples of the media not understanding the nature of what I do or the nature of my relationship to the Church. In the case of Premiere, the same article that contained the erroneous statement by the editors, also contained a photo caption which I did compose and which did correctly identify my position as "David Miscavige, Chairman of the Board of Religious Technology Center, Holder of the Trademarks of Dianetics and Scientology." On "Nightline," I was sitting on live, nationwide TV, engaged in rebutting a set up video for the show, containing 15 minutes of false and outrageous charges about Scientology and did not deem it important to pause from correcting those false charges so I could educate Mr. Koppel on matters of corporate structure.

22. My name has now been dragged through the mud in this litigation, not only by means of a mean-spirited personal attack, but also as part of what appears to be a tactic of hurling false and irrelevant allegations against Church of Scientology International, the Scientology religion and its Founder. It is unfortunate that I am now put in the position of defending my reputation and refuting lies about my religion that have become part of the record in this case. In that regard, I must note that in reviewing the sordid and outrageous allegations made about me by Geertz's counsel and Mr. Young, I was struck by their technique of using vague, innuendo-filled vignettes and unsubstantiated rumors in an effort to sound authoritative. I was also struck by the way that their declarations attempt to portray normal things as abnormal. I can only submit that trying to make the usual seem strange and trying to color events by innuendo are the tools by which bigotry is crafted and prejudice is spread.

23. The personal attacks on me, as well as many other irrelevant and malicious falsehoods that have been brought in this case, have largely been introduced through declarations of Robert Vaughn Young and Stacy Young and forwarded by Geertz's lawyer, Graham Berry. The Youngs left Scientology almost five years ago, have no personal knowledge of the current activities of RTC, CSI, or any other part of Scientology and, by their own admission, have no personal knowledge of the defendants in this case. Neither Vaughn nor Stacy Young ever worked with me or even near me during the entire time I have been employed by RTC. They couldn't possibly testify to any of my activities as RTC's Chairman of the Board since 1987 because they simply were in no position even to observe such activities. They are not experts on anything relating to Scientology, but have apparently been hired to file inflammatory declarations on non-issues in this suit. The Youngs are, however, generally aware of the fact

that, through the years, attempts to malign me personally and create a false picture of the Church with sensational allegations have been the stock-in-trade of litigants opposing the Church and the former Scientologists upon whom counsel rely to swear to matters they do not know and to make false allegations for which they have no basis. I believe that the Youngs' awareness of that litigation ploy explains their involvement in this case and defines the role they are playing.

24. For example, part of Vaughn Young's attack is his complete mischaracterization of my role in the dismantling and permanent disbanding of the Guardian's Office ("GO"). The Guardian's Office and the fallout that resulted from it is particularly significant as it is the linchpin of a litigation tactic that has been employed for years against me and the Church. Vaughn Young is simply revisiting the same path trod by others before, but as this has now been injected into the case I feel it important to address this matter, even if necessarily briefly.

25. Young would have the Court believe that I was an opportunist, using the jailing of Mary Sue Hubbard as a means of taking control of the GO, while leaving its criminally tainted substance unchanged and operating under a different name. This is a complete perversion of the true events, as set forth below. I would not have expected Young to know all of the details of how I directed the disbanding of the GO and the permanent expulsion of its leaders and other wrongdoers, as he was in a low level position in the GO at the time. However, he knows that when the staff of other Church units completely took over the GO offices and put an end to it as an organization, literally hundreds of his fellow GO staff members were dismissed, expelled from the religion, and forever barred from ever holding any position in any Church organization again.

DISBAND OF THE GUARDIAN OFFICE

26. To understand the magnitude of this upheaval, a description of the history, power and authority of the GO is vital. The GO was established in March of 1966 because legal and other external facing matters were consuming the time and resources of Churches of Scientology. In particular, Church leaders were being distracted from their primary functions of ministering to the spiritual needs of their expanding religious communities and building their organizations. During the 1970s the GO operated as an entirely autonomous organization unchecked and unsupervised by the ecclesiastical management of the Church. The power of the GO was absolute. Unless a member of the GO, one could not even enter their locked offices. They held all corporate directorships. They and they alone dealt with legal affairs of the Church. The GO operated in complete secrecy, and conducted its affairs independently of the Church and its management and personnel. Any attempt to find out their affairs, by Church ecclesiastical staff or any Scientologist, was met with the same "treatment" they handed out to others. For instance, GO staff carried out illegal programs, such as the infiltration of government offices for which eleven members of the GO were

prosecuted and convicted. There were also instances in which GO staff used unscrupulous means to deal with people they perceived as enemies of the Church -- means that were completely against Scientology tenets and policy, not to mention the law.

27. In 1981, a Church investigation was begun into the activities of the GO. That investigation was prompted by the existence of a number of civil law suits which had been filed at that time against Church of Scientology of California and Mr. Hubbard, and which the GO was supposed to be responsible for handling. Not only was the GO not handling these suits, the GO, and particularly Mary Sue Hubbard, even refused to answer our questions about the suits because they viewed themselves answerable only to persons within the GO. My involvement in the purge of the GO arose from my position at the time, Action Chief CMO International. My duties included directing Church missionaries conducting the investigation of the GO to determine the reasons for the GO's ineffectiveness and why the GO had departed from its original purpose.

28. Our attempts to get information were thwarted by Mary Sue Hubbard. She informed us that she did not appreciate our investigation of the GO and that if one were needed she would do it. In March 1981 she cut all of our communication lines to the GO, except through herself. It must be noted that Mary Sue Hubbard believed her position as Controller and as the "Founder's wife" to be unassailable and beyond reproach by anyone but Mr. Hubbard -- who was not around at the time, a fact that she was well aware of. This, plus her absolute control of the GO, made it difficult for the Church missionaries to get anything done.

29. In April 1981, in an unprecedented move and without Mary Sue Hubbard's knowledge, I sent a mission to the headquarters of the GO in England -- GO World Wide ("GOWW") -- to inspect the Legal Bureau under the guise that it had been authorized by Mary Sue Hubbard. What the mission found confirmed our worst suspicions.

30. We discovered that the GO had grossly mismanaged the legal affairs with which it had been entrusted, and displayed a disdain for the basic policies by which a Scientology organization is supposed to be guided. Whatever else the GO was, it was not Scientology, and it was not adhering to Scientology policy. Moreover, the GO continued to withhold from Church management the darkest of its secrets -- the criminal acts committed by GO staff against the United States government and others. We only learned of these crimes when we read copies of GO documents attached as exhibits to court papers filed by litigation adversaries. These documents had been removed by the GO from its own files in order to continue to hide their criminality from the Church. While the FBI had seized these documents in their 1977 raid of the Church, the GO had obtained an order sealing these materials from the public, including the Church. During a short period, the Court had lifted its sealing order and litigation adversaries obtained copies. And that is why we were only able to start discovering these acts when filed by the opposition in civil litigation.

31. When further investigation proved the documents to be authentic, it was made clear that we had no choice but to overthrow the GO and dismiss everyone who had violated Church policy or the law. These activities ultimately led to a complete disband of the GO. I gathered a couple of dozen of the most proven Church executives from around the world and briefed them on the criminal and other unethical conduct of the GO. Together, we planned a series of missions to take over the GO, investigate it and reform it thoroughly. On July 13, 1981, a matter of weeks after we had uncovered what was going on, and with no advance warning to the GO, a coordinated series of CMO missions were sent out concurrently to take over the GO.

32. However, there were a number of obstacles to overcome before the termination of the GO could be accomplished. Mary Sue Hubbard was still asserting her authority over the GO from her position as Controller. Contrary to Young's statements, she was not in jail, but was still very much in control of the GO. At the same time, Mary Sue Hubbard was covertly attempting to expand her power through her friendship with and influence over Laurel Sullivan, a Church staff member who was in charge of a project she referred to as the "MCCS project" -- the purpose of which was to "sort out" the corporate structure of Church of Scientology of California.

33. Instead of addressing a sensible reorganization of that Church, Sullivan and her GO supporters were making their own plans to establish trusts and for-profit entities which would have placed even greater corporate control of the Church in the hands of Mary Sue Hubbard and other GO executives in a fashion that would have assured the permanency of GO dominance and power.

34. Shortly before the purge of the Guardian's Office, I discussed with Laurel Sullivan various illicit GO activities we had already uncovered. Sullivan was aware of these activities. Sullivan did not agree that the acts the GO had committed were atrocious and that Mary Sue Hubbard and the rest of her criminal group needed to be removed. She insisted that Mary Sue Hubbard remain in power and that at all costs she and the Guardian's Office should maintain total control of the organization regardless of the criminal acts exposed by the government and others, in which Sullivan felt the GO was completely justified in committing.

35. Upon learning of Laurel Sullivan's alliance with the GO and the plans to reorganize the Church under Mary Sue Hubbard and her GO allies, I removed Sullivan from her position and disbanded the MCCS project altogether. In fact, recently released documents reveal that Laurel Sullivan -- who would later become an adverse witness against the church and me -- long ago admitted to law enforcement officials that the corporate restructuring of the Church actually implemented, differed entirely from that envisioned in her MCCS project.

36. Contrary to Young's claims, Mary Sue Hubbard was removed from her post before she went to jail. I know, because I

personally met with her and obtained her resignation. Vaughn Young was not present at that meeting nor was he present at any of the events described here. He does not and cannot know what occurred. I do. At first, Mary Sue Hubbard was not willing to resign. Eventually she did so. Mary Sue Hubbard and the GO, however, did not simply capitulate.

37. Within a day of Mary Sue Hubbard's resignation, senior GO officials secretly met with Mary Sue Hubbard and conspired to regain control of the GO. Mary Sue Hubbard signed a letter revoking her resignation and condemning the actions of the CMO. Scores of GO staff responded, locking the missionaries out of their premises and were intending to hire armed guards to bar access by me and the other Church officials who had ousted them. I then confronted the mutineers, and persuaded Mary Sue Hubbard to again resign, which ended the last vestige of GO resistance.

38. When it was decided that cleaning up and maintaining the Guardian's Office in any form was not workable and that it needed to be disbanded altogether, this was accomplished by a series of CMO Int missions sent to GO offices around the world. The pattern of the missions was to remove all GO staff from their positions and put them on estates work and physical labor around the church. Before being disbanded the GO's Finance Bureau had monitored some aspects of the Church's finances, including the production of and maintenance of accounts and financial records. With the disbanding of the GO, this function was taken over by the International Finance Network, where it remains. Public relations activities were put under the direction and supervision of the L. Ron Hubbard Personal Public Relations Officer International and his staff. All GO social betterment functions - drug rehabilitation, criminal rehabilitation and educational reform, were taken over by a new organization known as Social Coordination. Later this function was assumed by Association for Better Living and Education ("ABLE"), recognized as a tax-exempt organization by the IRS. To administer legal affairs, the Office of Special Affairs ("OSA") was formed from a mixture of Sea Org staff who had been on one or more of the missions that had disbanded the GO, new staff recruited to work in the area and some former GO staff who had survived investigation and scrutiny and had undergone ethics clean-ups relating to their former affiliation in the GO. Completely unlike the GO, the Office of Special Affairs is not an autonomous group. OSA International is part of the Flag Command Bureau and the highest OSA management position is that of CO OSA Int. The Watchdog Committee has a WDC member, WDC OSA, whose sole job is to see that OSA Int effectively performs its functions and operates according to Church policy. Local OSA representatives, called Directors of Special Affairs, are staff at their local church subject to the supervision of the church's Executive Council.

39. To further ensure that the old GO influence was completely terminated, all "Guardian Orders," the non-standard issues which GO staff followed instead of Mr. Hubbard's policies, were canceled. These numbered in the thousands. Today, none of the individuals involved in the

criminal activities of the Guardian's Office are serving on the staff of any organization within the Church hierarchy. During the years 1981 through 1983, the Church kept a record of the names of individuals we found to have been involved in illegal activities, who condoned them, or who were in a position where they should have known and done something to stop them. Any individuals who were found at that time to be on staff were dismissed and informed never to apply for reemployment. A list of names of ex-GO members either involved in, condoning, or being in a position to stop criminal acts is maintained by the International Justice Chief (IJC) at Flag Bureaux. Church organizations are required to check with IJC prior to hiring any ex-Guardian's Office staff member; that means anybody who was ever employed by the GO, whether he was involved in or cognizant of any criminal acts or not. The IJC then checks the names against the list of those banned from staff and informs the local Church organization whether it can hire the individual or not. The Church has thus ensured that no individuals involved in the criminal activities of the GO ever serve on staff. Ironically, the lone exception, discussed below, was created by Vicki Aznaran.

40. Vaughn Young displays his ignorance of the actual facts concerning the dissolution of the GO, for this was no mere "cosmetic alteration," as he so ridiculously asserts. In a police interview, Laurel Sullivan, the GO ally and architect of the stillborn MCCS project, characterized the purge of the GO as a "blitzkrieg," in marked contrast to Vaughn Young's vastly understated description. It was, in fact, a major, dramatic, and permanent overhaul, with over 800 GO staff dismissed as unqualified or because of their disagreements with Church policies or because of their complicity in criminal conduct. It required approximately 50 separate missions to purge the GO. The posts of Guardian and Controller were abolished.

41. As a direct result of the GO corruption and its ultimate overthrow, the Church embarked on a complete corporate reorganization, in part to prevent such criminality from ever occurring again and to make sure a "new GO" could never come about. This is where CSI and RTC came into existence and the reasons for their place in the Church hierarchy are clearly stated in the Church of Scientology International reference book What is Scientology?

NOVEMBER 1, 1981

The Church of Scientology International was founded, signaling a new era of Scientology management. A strong standardized corporate structure was required to facilitate the rapid expansion of Scientology and maintain high ethical standards in a widespread international network of churches. This followed a series of Sea Org inspections that discovered that the Guardian's Office (which had been established in 1966 to protect the Church from external attacks and care for its legal matters) had become entirely autonomous and corrupt. The Guardian's Office had been infiltrated by individuals antithetical to Scientology and had become an organization that operated completely apart from the

day-to-day activities of the Church. Their secret actions in violation of Church policy had resulted in eleven members being jailed for obstruction of justice. Sea Organization executives overthrew the Guardian's Office and disbanded it. Part of the measures taken to ensure a similar situation could never recur was the formation of the Religious Technology Center on 1 January 1982. L. Ron Hubbard bestowed the trademarks of Scientology to RTC, whose purpose is to safeguard the proper use of the marks and ensure they remain in good hands and are properly used.

42. Vaughn Young calling the dismantling of the GO "cosmetic" is the functional equivalent of someone referring to World War II as a "tiff." He wasn't where the dismantling occurred, he doesn't know what happened, and he has no clue.

43. It is important to point out how far from the actual practice of Scientology the GO had departed and to point out the reason that Young is attempting to trivialize the purge of the GO. Unless Young characterizes the GO dismantling as "cosmetic," he cannot argue that his allegations of what he calls "Fair Game" continued to be committed after the GO was eradicated. It is a standard ploy for opposing litigants to point to the GO and allege "Fair Game" being practiced today on the basis of what the GO did thirteen or more years ago. In Young's "Fair Game" accusations, he is merely trying to stigmatize the Church today by dredging up the type of illicit activity in which the GO indulged and falsely ascribing it to the people who are responsible for ridding Scientology of the GO. What the GO did in the 1970's was not pursuant to "Fair Game." One should call their actions by the precise term that describes them: illegal. But which side was Vaughn Young on during the early 1980s when all of this criminal conduct came to light? I was cleaning out the GO; Young was in the GO. We became aware of the acts of the Guardian's Office and were more horrified by the GO and its crimes than law enforcement officials and others outside the Church. Eleven people were indicted by the authorities; we discharged 800 GO staff. There isn't one iota of evidence concerning my involvement in any GO activities, or that of any other current Church executive. None of us had any involvement in the GO other than to obliterate it forever. Moreover, there isn't one iota of evidence that any current Church staff or executive ever engaged in any conduct reminiscent of the GO.

44. Once the Guardian's Office was disbanded there was much that needed to be done to deal with the legal and public relations matters that had been mishandled by that office for so many years. The years of neglect and the GO's destructive acts had put the Church in a position where it was repeatedly being attacked in civil cases, and even the Founder of the religion was being pulled into these suits, despite the fact that he had no connection with any of the claims or acts alleged by civil litigants.

FORMULATION OF AUTHOR SERVICES

45. Mr. Hubbard took no part in the disbanding of the GO or removal of Mary Sue Hubbard. In fact, the first he heard of

it was five months after the initial purge, in July of 1981. While he had been out of communication and uninvolved in Church activities for the previous two years, he had engaged in further researches on Dianetics and Scientology. More relevant, however, was that he had also, for the first time since the release of Dianetics in 1950, resumed his writing of fiction. Mr. Hubbard understood that the representation of these works and their publication could not be handled within the Church. Accordingly, in 1982, Author Services was formed to manage the personal affairs of L. Ron Hubbard including his literary, financial and legal matters. As I was held in some regard by Mr. Hubbard, I was given the opportunity to be part of this new endeavor. Beginning in 1982, I devoted my full time and attention to Mr. Hubbard's personal affairs from my position as Chief Executive Officer of Author Services. Youngs's contention that I was somehow managing all Scientology Churches internationally at the same time that I was supervising Mr. Hubbard's affairs is preposterous.

FALSE ALLEGATIONS AS A LITIGATION TACTIC

46. Since the purge of the GO, I have been repeatedly forced to deal with the points of false allegations that Mr. Young has made here, as well as other lies circulated by a handful of the very individuals I had kicked out. I have become the target of attack for the activities of the very individuals I purged from the Church. In this litigation, Fishman has made numerous allegations about my "involvement" in his criminal enterprise. These allegations are not only false, but resulted in his criminal conviction. Vaughn and Stacy Young have littered the record of this matter further by giving "expert" testimony to support Fishman's allegations by stating, "they might have occurred" based on the acts of the old GO. This is not the first time this tactic has been used as a litigation ploy to harass me and divert the Court's attention from the actual facts in litigation. Each time similar allegations have been raised in the past, however, I have been completely vindicated.

47. The first bizarre episode -- of which Mr. Young is aware, but of which he makes no mention -- illustrates Mr. Young's knowledge of the tactic of generating false allegations as a litigation ploy. This particular episode led to an FBI investigation and a bogus lawsuit, but ultimately led to complete exoneration of me. Shortly after I became Chief Executive Officer of ASI, a call came in to ASI from a New England-based bank. The phone caller was calling to verify that a check supposedly signed by Mr. Hubbard should be cleared. After ascertaining that the check was not valid, I stopped payment on it in my capacity as the Chief Executive Officer of Mr. Hubbard's personal, business and literary agency. The matter of this forged check, however, assumed even greater proportions when a so-called "probate" action was commenced against the "estate" of L. Ron Hubbard.

48. The probate action was filed by a Boston-based personal injury attorney who induced Ron DeWolfe (L. Ron Hubbard's estranged son who had long since been written out of his will), to claim that Mr. Hubbard's estate was being looted and that DeWolfe should be appointed to "protect it." This

Boston attorney was the same one who had pending literally dozens of damage suits naming Mr. Hubbard and which portrayed the Church and the religion's Founder in the most outrageous and prejudicial manner imaginable. Yet, suddenly, in the probate action, that lawyer was suing to "protect" Mr. Hubbard's estate.

49. To buttress the false claim that Mr. Hubbard's estate was being looted, DeWolfe and his lawyer made reference to the forged check mentioned above. I had no idea how they were aware there had been an attempt to pass a forged check on Mr. Hubbard's account. Upon examining the facts we were able to develop, we learned that the bank had informed the FBI about the forged check, and that the first and only person the FBI contacted for information was this same Boston attorney, who told the FBI that I, one of Mr. Hubbard's closest and trusted friends, was the most likely candidate to have committed the forgery! As a result, I became the target of an FBI investigation, even though I had been the one who stopped payment on it when I was alerted to the check's existence. Eventually, the entire probate case was dismissed and I was cleared of any involvement with the forgery. Nonetheless, I had been unjustly subjected to negative press in all manner of media publications literally all over the world. Furthermore, this incident of the forged check and the probate case marked the emergence of a new litigation tactic, one that Vaughn Young and Geertz's counsel are trying to exploit here.

50. Upon the dismissal of the probate action, DeWolfe's attorney announced that his "real" purpose in bringing the probate action had been to force Mr. Hubbard out of seclusion so he could be served in the civil damages cases filed by DeWolfe's lawyer. The idea was simple. Aware that Mr. Hubbard wanted to maintain his privacy and seclusion, the lawyer would notice Mr. Hubbard's deposition as both an individual and as a "managing agent" of the Church. Default or settlement then would follow a managing agent finding and non-appearance. This ploy was particularly effective since Mr. Hubbard went completely out of touch with any and all Church entities from May of 1984, until he passed away in January of 1986. Even if they had so desired, the Church was literally incapable of presenting Mr. Hubbard for deposition to give testimony to end this ruse. Vaughn Young knew that Mr. Hubbard was not in communication with the Church during the time that ploy was being pursued. Vaughn Young also knew this litigation tactic, and his knowledge of it is evident in this case. It is precisely what is happening here, except Young's false claims of managing agent of the Church status are directed at me.

51. I am not L. Ron Hubbard, nor am I in seclusion. I am visible and I testify. Most of all, as set forth in detail above, I am not CSI's managing agent, and Vaughn Young's attempt to characterize me as such collapses from the weight of his ignorance of the corporate, tax, legal and financial structures of RTC, CSI, and every other Church-related organization. Ironically, this tired litigation tactic was finally put to rest with respect to L. Ron Hubbard hours before his death on January 24, 1986, when Judge Mariana R.

Pfaelzer definitively ruled that L. Ron Hubbard was not the managing agent of any church. A copy of that order is annexed as Exhibit A.

52. Next, I was subjected to a two and a half year criminal investigation by the Internal Revenue Service. Ironically, the very people I had kicked out of the GO exploited the government's concern over acts the GO had committed to make me the target of an investigation based on the very acts they had committed. Of course they didn't make their previous associations with the GO known. In fact, the IRS's Criminal Investigation Division ("CID") was based on specious allegations filed in civil litigation and spread in the media. The thrust of the investigation was an alleged criminal conspiracy begun in 1966 to impede the Internal Revenue Service. I was the primary target of this investigation even though I was only six years old when I began the "conspiracy."

53. The CID's massive investigation was ultimately rejected outright by the Justice Department. However, the IRS dossier on me, an accumulation of over 100,000 pages of documents -- the largest in the Service's history -- was filled with falsehoods from a handful of bitter former Scientologists and ex-GO like Mr. Young. It contained the same allegations that have been repeatedly disproved, but which are nevertheless being made again in this case.

54. For example, Mr. Young repeats the allegations made by Gerry Armstrong that the Church practices "Fair Game" and that Gerry Armstrong was in "fear of his life." To bolster the validity of this allegation, Vaughn Young refers to the Breckenridge decision. What Mr. Young fails to disclose, however, is the fact that following that opinion, Armstrong was proven a liar. In a police-sanctioned investigation, Gerry Armstrong was captured on video tape acknowledging his real motives, namely a plot to overthrow the Church leadership and gain control of the Church. On those very video tapes, Armstrong acknowledges he not only isn't "afraid," but that he "will bring the Church to its knees." While plotting his overthrow attempt he gives advice that the Church should be accused of various criminal acts. When told no evidence exists to support such "charges," he responds, "just allege it." It should be noted that while Gerry Armstrong had been an "informant" during the IRS criminal investigation, based on these tapes and statements, the IRS dropped him as a witness, thereby repudiating his credibility. Vaughn and Stacy Young were fully aware of these facts as Stacy wrote the cover story in Freedom Magazine that exposed Armstrong's plot.

55. The steady barrage of such falsehoods poisoned the IRS with respect to the Church generally and me personally. Years later, IRS Internal Security agent Keith Kuhn filed a declaration in several cases, falsely accusing me of threatening another IRS agent with whom I had never spoken in my life. That declaration was stricken as unsupported and scurrilous, and the IRS was ordered by Judge Keller of this Court to pay sanctions for having filed it at all. [Ex. 8, Order and transcript, Church of Scientology of California v.

IRS, No. CV 90-5638 WDK (C.D.Cal.)]

56. The attempts to harass me in litigation have extended to creating not just false allegations, but false documents as well. In 1984, a former staff member, who was employed by a splinter group that was seeking to pull Scientologists away from the Church for the splinter group's profit, created a forged document entitled SMASH THE SQUIRRELS which was allegedly written by me and which purported to show that I intended some form of harassment towards apostates of Scientology. One would normally ignore such wild incidents, except this document was continuously used against me in litigation, most particularly to prevent me from gaining access to government files on me. I have had to fight this issue for years and only last year was this matter put to rest. This document was recently examined in a Freedom of Information Act case, Miscavige v. IRS, No. CV 88-7341 TJH (C.D.Cal.) by Special Master Jack Tenner, who found that it was, in fact, a forgery and could not be used in court. That decision was affirmed by Judge Hatter of this Court. [Ex. D, Order of Judge Hatter.] Even though this document has been ruled to be a forgery, Geertz's attorneys have now referred to it and seek to use it in this case as if it were real.

57. Perhaps the most telling indication that the allegations made by Mr. Young and other apostates regarding corporate and financial affairs of various Church entities are false, is the recent recognition of the tax exempt status of all Scientology Churches in the United States by the IRS. This recognition of exemption followed the most exhaustive review of financial records and corporate structure of any exemption application ever filed. That process is described in detail in the accompanying declaration of Monique E. Yingling. [Ex. C.] As part of the exemption process, the IRS also considered and rejected virtually all of the same allegations that are now being made against me in this case. These discredited and untrue charges should not have to be dealt with time and time again. After the most extensive review in IRS history, to have uninformed apostates second-guessing the IRS's determination, and regurgitating false claims that the IRS and Courts have rejected again and again, putting me in the position of defending against the same old allegations, is ludicrous! This has to end somewhere, as it is not just wasting my time, but the Court's time as well. All the while further false accusations are made that the Church likes litigation. Magistrate Tassopoulos stated on January 4, 1994, "You know you people enjoy the fight..." To the degree this statement is directed at me, she is just wrong. I despise litigation and in fact know of no Scientologist who enjoys it. However, we have been forced to defend ourselves because of unfounded allegations the courts seem too willing to accept or which they are incapable of preventing.

THE YOUNGS' LACK OF KNOWLEDGE OF SCIENTOLOGY CORPORATE MATTERS

58. Putting aside Mr. Young's familiarity with the tactic of maligning the Church and me as a litigation weapon, I simply do not understand from where Mr. Young purports to derive his self-proclaimed "expertise" about Scientology as a religion,

or about the corporate, legal, or financial affairs of RTC, CSI, or any other Scientology organization. I know Mr. Young, having worked with him briefly on specific projects in 1981 and 1983, and once held him in some personal regard. He never occupied any position of corporate or ecclesiastical authority in any Church or in ASI, and certainly did not have any significant personal exposure to how the corporate or ecclesiastical structure of Scientology is established or how it works. He cannot claim any personal knowledge in that regard since July of 1989. At no time did he occupy any "inner circle" in Scientology leadership and, in candor, he was never in any position to have any knowledge of what I do or how I do it. To that I must add that despite his outrageous claim to the contrary, I never in my life laid a finger on Vaughn Young, let alone beat him unconscious or otherwise, as he claims. Indeed, this allegation only surfaced once he attempted to enmesh me in this case. It is absurd on its face for Mr. Young to have omitted this alleged incident from his earlier affidavits which purportedly cited the reasons "why he left the church." In my mind, his need to invent complete lies such as this reveal that his motives are personal, his character is spiteful, his aim is money, and he means to those ends know virtually no limits.

59. Vaughn Young completely misstates my relationship to the plaintiff Church of Scientology International. Young claims that I somehow direct, manage and control every facet of CSI's operations and activities. This also is ludicrous. CSI has well over a thousand staff members who deal with international promotion and dissemination efforts, evaluate situations in Scientology churches around the world, and provide plans and programs that give guidance to these churches. This is the activity of international and middle management of CSI, which has an entirely different purpose and sphere of activity than RTC. My job as Chairman of the Board involves many functions, but does not include management of CSI or any other Scientology church. I do not create corporate strategy nor do I direct or manage the personnel of CSI. I do not remove CSI's directors or officers. I do not run CSI or its executives. Anyone who would testify to the contrary is either uninformed or untrustworthy.

60. The Youngs have chosen not only to malign me personally, but also to attack the very religious beliefs and practices which they once professed to follow. Although the religious nature of Scientology has been recognized by courts and administrative bodies throughout the world for decades, the defendants and their witnesses are attempting to enter the constitutionally forbidden area of judicial evaluations of religious tenets by placing the meaning and efficacy of religious beliefs and practices of Scientology on trial. Deliberately distorted interpretations of Scientology religious doctrine have been filed in this Court concerning Scientology concepts such as PTS Type 3 and Black Dianetics. At the same time, defendant Steven Fishman has also invented entirely fictitious terms such as "EOC," and claimed that they are part of Scientology. They are not. His claim that there is anything in the Scientology religion that even resembles a directive to commit murder or suicide is as

outrageous as it is ridiculous. These are all total misrepresentations of religious doctrine made by people who are not in the least qualified to make doctrinal judgments. I can say categorically that "EOC" does not exist in Scientology, and the concept ascribes to it in this case by the defendants is false and scandalous.

61. Young tries to gain credibility by stating he was one of maybe ten people summoned to Mr. Hubbard's ranch when he passed away. He was not the first to be called, but arrived with a cook, a carpenter, gardeners, and a guard. More importantly, the press on LRH's passing away was not handled from the ranch. Vaughn Young was at the ranch to deal with any local inquiries and with the neighbors and farmhands who had been friends of Mr. Hubbard, and he worked under the guidance of another ASI staff member.

62. Young also mentions Pat Broeker, and attempts to position Broeker as someone who had power and legitimacy within the Church structure. Young, who never held a senior management position during the entirety of his time in the Church, falsely claims that there was a power struggle between Broeker and me after the death of L. Ron Hubbard. This assertion demonstrates Young's lack of knowledge of the actual corporate structure of the Church. Pat Broeker was neither an officer nor a director nor a trustee of Religious Technology Center, CSI or any other Church corporation. It was only an ignorant and destructive few, such as Vaughn Young and Vicki Aznaran, who ever believed or supported Broeker's claims to authority. No removal of Pat Broeker occurred or was necessary. He simply did not hold any position in any Church corporation. Vicki Aznaran, on the other hand, was removed from her position as President and Inspector General of RTC. She herself has testified to the reasons for her removal -- employing an ex-GO staff member involved in criminal acts and allowing false Church scriptures to be presented as authentic writings of Mr. Hubbard, when she knew they were not.

63. All of the foregoing should be viewed in the context of Scientology being a new, evolving religion. Although unfortunate, all emerging religions in history have gone through a period of turmoil, especially following the death of its Founder. Scientology is no exception. However, we have entered into an extended period of calm and expansion since these upheavals in the 1980s. The resolution of the long-standing conflict with the IRS is perhaps the best indicator of this

"OF AND CONCERNING" CSI

64. The only issue mentioned by the defendants in connection with taking my deposition which is even arguably relevant to this case is the so-called "of and concerning" issue. That can be disposed of in a few sentences. When a person makes a statement about "Scientology" or the "Church of Scientology," the most reasonable conclusion is that the reference is to CSI. CSI is the Church corporation that is viewed as "Scientology" by the public at large. Major Scientology publications found in public bookstores regularly contain

introductory remarks from CSI. For example, the book What is Scientology?, which has just recently been distributed in paperback around the country, has an introduction from CSI. Freedom Magazine, which Stacy Young tried to sever from the Church, proudly states that it is published by CSI. Likewise, when a Scientology spokesman is wanted by the media for virtually anything about "Scientology" or the "Church," they routinely contact CSI. When the IRS recognized CSI as tax exempt and established a group exemption so that new churches could immediately become tax exempt on the authority of the Mother Church, it was CSI to whom the group exemption authority was given. It certainly is reasonable for the public to understand statements about "Scientology" and the "Church" as referring to CSI.

CONCLUSION

65. The thrust of the declarations filed by Vaughn and Stacy Young is that the allegations made by Fishman should be believed. This is remarkable in itself since the Youngs have apparently never met him and never knew him. They appear completely willing to accept this convicted felon at face value, although he served a prison sentence for obstructing an FBI investigation of his financial scam, by telling the same lies about the Church that he is telling this Court. The Youngs devote pages to descriptions of a "Fair Game" policy that no longer exists. Yet they are silent as to their own experiences between the time they left the Church in 1989 and the time they began their careers as paid for hire witnesses. What did happen after they left the Church? There was no harassment. They were free to leave, which they did. We got on with our lives and paid them no attention. Now, nearly five years later, they have resurfaced, making outrageous accusations and participating in an effort to resurrect in this case the tactics of the GO of which Vaughn Young was once a part. The conclusion that necessarily flows from those facts is that the only reason that the Youngs feel safe enough to make their outrageously false allegations of bad conduct and harassment against the Church and me is because they know there will be no "Fair Game" retaliation, thanks to my kicking out the GO and putting a permanent end to their lies.

66. Since 1981, I have heard this allegation of Fair Game literally thousands of times. Yet, I had never even heard the term until I saw it used in civil litigation, and to this day have never once heard the term used within the Church. Nor have I ever heard, even from civil litigants anything actually done to them. Its use is strictly as a smear tactic when one has no act to point to. Vaughn and Stacy Young know the trick and since they know the truth about the use of this tactic against Scientology, I find their declarations particularly disingenuous.

67. The foregoing represents what testimony I believe I had to give in this case had Geertz's counsel not refused to take the deposition of me that he persuaded the Magistrate Judge to order. The essence of the matter is this -- I do not know Fishman and I do not know Geertz, and as to my knowledge of either of them, either before or after the Time magazine

article, it is nil. Having no basis to seek my testimony in this case, Geertz's counsel resurrected the same tactics that adversaries have employed for years in litigation involving the Church, namely the employment of hired guns like Vaughn and Stacy Young, to make allegations about matters of which they know nothing. Unlike the Youngs, I know the facts about the matters they address. Unlike the Youngs, I was there. Their self-proclaimed and completely non-existent "expertise" is a disingenuous litigation tactic in pursuit of harassment, and that "expertise" is shown to be fiction crafted for hire and evidence of nothing. The GO was disbanded with finality and the criminals within were forever banished. The IRS attacks were brought to a conclusion with finality. I did those things; the Youngs did not. I know those facts; the Youngs do not. The Youngs present nothing but dusted-off, discredited allegations that cannot withstand scrutiny. I have provided the Court with an accurate, first-hand account of the facts. I declare under penalty of perjury under the laws of the United States of America that the foregoing is true and correct.

Executed this [illegible, eighth?] day of
February 1994, at Riverside County, California

DAVID MISCAVIGE

\032

'Verdedig nooit,

vat altijd aan'

Er woedt een bijna Heilige Oorlog tussen de Internet-gemeenschap en de Scientology Church. Auteursrecht en anonieme remailers zijn de inzet van de strijd, die zich niet beperkt tot online gekisshis over geheimzinnige Fishman-documenten. Buiten het net spelen huiszoekingen, rechtszaken, intimidatie en privé-detectives een rol. Een ontluisterend verhaal over de manier waarop Scientology zijn tegenstanders de mond snoert. Of zoals een medewerker van Internet-provider XS4All het zegt: "Voor je het weet heb je een proces aan je broek. Scientology is een gevaarlijke organisatie".

MIND CONTROL

Co\$

INTERNET-GEMEENSCHAP
SCIENTOLOGY CHURCH SNOERT
TEGENSTANDERS DE MOND

MET HUISZOEKINGEN, RECHTSZAKEN,
INTIMIDATIE EN PRIVÉ-DETECTIVES

Jeroen Pietersema



Waar gaat het om? In de Usenet-nieuwsgroep alt.religion.scientology ageert de Internet-gemeenschap tegen diverse aspecten van wat zij 'Scientos' noemen. Maar zij posten daarbij ook Scientology-teksten. Die teksten, waar auteursrecht op rust, vormen een groot deel van de inkomstenbron van Scientology. Een aantal van die teksten, bekend als Operating Thetan-levels (OT-levels, een reeks cursussen die aanhangers tegen betaling van veel geld stap voor stap kunnen volgen), is via ex-Scientology-leden naar buiten gekomen en ligt op het Internet voor het oprapen. De teksten worden via anonieme remailers verstuurd, uit vrees voor represailles. Een anonieme remailer is een computer die e-mail ontdoet van naam en adres. Daarvoor in de plaats komt een nummer, waar de remailer het juiste adres weer bij kan zoeken als iemand een anonieme e-mailer een bericht wil sturen.

De verhaal begint in augustus als ik de notulen krijg van de oprichtingsvergadering van NLIP, een branchevereniging van Nederlandse Internet-providers. Daarin wordt zijdelings melding gemaakt van een mogelijk proces van Scientology tegen XS4All, omdat laatstgenoemde een

is te veel en te ingewikkeld. Ik ga op zoek naar een lijst met FAQ's. De alt.religion.scientology Frequently Asked Questions vind ik op <http://www.cis.ohio-state.edu/hypertext/faq/usenet/scientology-faq/faq.html>. Het is een FAQ vol kritische kanttekeningen bij Scientology, met de strekking: Scientology heeft nog nooit enig bewijs voor haar leer geleverd. De FAQ is vrij oppervlakkig (volgens Scientology een 'collectief van onwaarheden') maar maakt me duidelijk dat er iets rommelt op het net.

Terug bij Webcrawler laat ik de muispijl langs de hypertext-links gaan en kijk naar de URL's. Ik ontdek een Nederlandse homepage op <http://www.xs4all.nl/~fonss/>. Klik, en ik bevind me op een pagina van FACT-Net. FACTNet (Fight Against Coercive Tactics Network Inc.), geleid door twee ex-Scientologen, is een non-profit elektronische bibliotheek met publieke informatie over 'gevaarlijke sektes als Jonestown, Branch Davidians (Waco) en Scientology'. En dat zint Scientology niet, blijkt uit informatie op en achter de FACTNet-pagina en de homepage The Church of Scientology vs. the Net op <http://www.cybercom.net/~rnewman/scientology/home.html>. Scientology heeft begin dit jaar meerdere malen bedreigd een proces aan te spannen als FACTNet weigert alle informatie over Scientology te verwijderen. Volgens FACTNet neemt de druk van Scientology toe, en de organisatie noemt een reeks voorbeelden van de financiële uitputtingsslag die Scientology is begonnen. FACTNet denkt de strijd niet te kunnen volhouden en roept daarom iedereen op zoveel mogelijk informatie te downloaden om een 'elektronische boekverbranding' te voorkomen.

**ONLANGS ONTVING XS4ALL
EEN BRIEF VAN SCIENTOLOGY
MET DE STREKKING: 'HET
VERSTUREN VAN
DOCUMENTEN VIA DE
REMAILER MOET OPHOUDEN
OF WE NEMEN
JURIDISCHE STAPPEN'**

anonieme remailer heeft via welke documenten van 'De Kerk' worden verspreid.

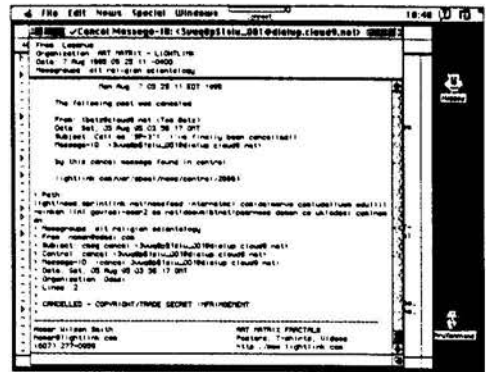
Voordat ik XS4All bel, ga ik het WWW op en tik bij de Webcrawler (locatie: <http://www.webcrawler.com>) 'scientology' in. Binnen enkele seconden verschijnt een imposante lijst met hypertext-links. Ik draai het net op en vind in korte tijd een schat aan informatie, voornamelijk anti-Scientology.

Ik lees over de Scientology materie, misdadige praktijken, kinderporno, rechtszaken, privé-detectives en moord en zelfmoord. Het



scientology heeft nooit van critici gehouden en heeft volgens FACTNet regels om tegenstanders aan te pakken. Die regels staan in de Fair Game Law die volgens FACTNet werd opgesteld door Scientology-oprichter L. Ron Hubbard (zie kader L. Ron Hubbard & Scientology).

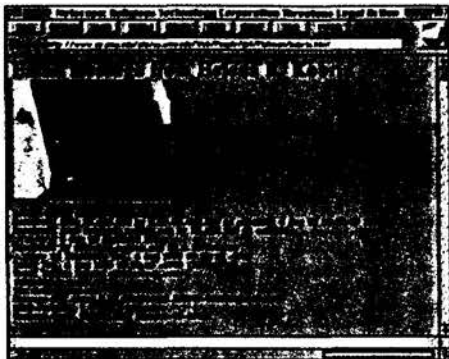
In <http://www.xs4all.nl/~fonss/fact.txt> staat: '(Een vijand) mag beroofd worden van bezit of onrecht aangedaan worden, met alle middelen door elke Scientoloog, zonder enige discipline van de Scientoloog (...) mag worden beetgenomen, gedagvaard, tegen worden gelogen of vernietigd'. En: 'Het doel van een rechtsgeding is meer afmatten en ontmoedigen dan winnen. Verdedig nooit. Val altijd aan. (...) Begin een zwartmakende PR-campagne om de persoons reputatie te vernietigen en hem zo grondig in diskrediet te brengen dat hij zal worden verbannen. De wet kan heel gemakkelijk worden gebruikt om af te matten, en genoeg afmatting (...) is gewoonlijk genoeg om een beroepsmatige dood te veroorzaken (...) Indien mogelijk, ruïneer hem uiteraard volledig'.



Vervalste cancel-messages in alt.religion.scientology.

LAATSTE NIEUWS
Bij het ter perse gaan van deze uitgave werd bekend dat Scientology al een inval had laten doen bij XS4All. Vooralsnog lijkt het erop dat er geen proces volgt, omdat het omstreden document door de XS4All-gebruiker is verwijderd.

'Ruïneer hem volledig'



Helena K. Kobrin, op haar mail message en in de spotprent.

Alle tekstbestanden staan sinds eind mei in .ZIP-formaat op een FTP-site (<ftp://ftp.rmii.com/pub2/factnet/>), en sinds april heeft een onbekende een 'FACTNet Scientology WWW-Kit' op het net gezet. die iedereen achter een homepage kan installeren. De kit is te downloaden op <http://www.xs4all.nl/~fonss/factkit.zip>.

'Praat maar tegen mijn advocaat'

Ik wil in contact komen met mensen die Scientology bekritisieren. Het duurt me te lang om deelnemers uit de nieuwsgroep aan te schrijven en op antwoord te wachten. Ik start een Internet Relay Chat-programma en geef het commando '/join #scientology'. Raak; het is een kanaal, er zijn mensen, maar wordt geen woord gewisseld. Het commando '/whois' in combinatie met namen van kanaalgenoten leert me dat zij allemaal op het IRC-kanaal #clambake zitten.

Op #clambake wordt gechat, en al snel word ik aangesproken. Voorzichtig, want er hangt een spanning en het lijkt of niemand iemand vertrouwt. Na een half uurtje zinnnetjes uitwisselen met Jack (hij wil niet met zijn echte naam in het verhaal) begint hij pas duidelijke informatie los te laten. Jack is geïnteresseerd in vrijheid van meningsuiting, en las in een nieuwsgroep iets over vervalste cancel-messages in **alt.religion.scientology**, een manier om iemands artikelen in een nieuwsgroep te schrappen. Met andere woorden: censuur. Daarover later meer.

Na enige tijd aan **alt.religion.scientology** te hebben deelgenomen, schrijft Jack, kreeg hij een e-mail van Scientology-advocaat Helena K. Kobrin. Jack speelt de elektronische brief aan mij door en ik lees dat Kobrin beweert dat Jack

L. Ron Hubbard

3 edenker van Scientology is LaFayette Ronald Hubbard (13 maart 1911 – 24 januari 1986). Hubbard studeerde volgens zijn eigen PR-afdeling technische bouwkunde, reisde veel en was filosoof, onderwijzer, zeeman, artiest, ontdekker, piloot, fotograaf, auteur en meer.

Een 'expert' deed in opdracht van XS4All onderzoek naar Scientology en schrijft over Hubbard: 'Over zijn jeugd valt weinig te zeggen, aangezien de gegevens die hij hier over heeft verschaft overdreven en veelal bij elkaar gelogen blijken te zijn'. Zijn tweede vrouw Sarah Northrup noemde hem al in 1951, bij hun scheiding, 'hopeloos geestesziek'.

In mei 1950 publiceert Hubbard zijn bekendste tekst 'Dianetics: an introduction to a new science' in een science-fiction-blad. De hele oplage is onmiddellijk uitverkocht. Hubbard zou in die tijd gezegd hebben: "Wanneer je miljonair wilt worden, moet je je eigen religie oprichten". Het even later uitgebrachte boek 'Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Health' haalde al snel een oplage van 150.000, en wordt nog steeds door Scientology verkocht. Na de publicatie van Dianetics gaan er door Hubbard geleide instituten open, en Dianetics blijkt een gouden vondst te zijn. Hubbard trekt vooral de aandacht van jonge mensen en die kamperen al snel in zijn voortuin.

Journetlistiek

Zonder het Internet was het niet mogelijk geweest alle informatie voor dit verhaal betrekkelijk snel bij elkaar te krijgen. Dan was het een tijdrovend en waarschijnlijk te duur verhaal geworden. Een contact met een insider was zo gelegd, doelgericht zoeken op het net verliep snel. Binnen enkele dagen had ik meer dan de helft van mijn informatie binnen. Zonder het net had ik op pad moeten gaan om in archieven en bibliotheken rond te neuzen, had ik informatie uit Amerika moeten opvragen en dat kan weken duren. Veel van mijn bronnen die ik heb 'gesproken' had ik nooit op korte termijn kunnen opbellen. Omdat ik absoluut niet zou weten waar ik het telefoonnummer van die Amerikaanse ex-Scientoloog had moeten vinden. Op het net is een goede bron zo gevonden, en terwijl ik lag te slapen stroomde de informatie binnen. Want het net werkt 24 uur per dag.

Scientology-documenten op het net heeft gezet. Kobrin eist dat hij ze onmiddellijk verwijdert (ook van zijn harde schijf en floppydisks) en daarna per e-mail verklaart gehoor te hebben gegeven aan het verzoek. Zo niet, dan zullen juridische stappen volgen.

Het Fishman-document

Nadat ik het e-mail-adres van Kobrin in de Four11 White Page Directory heb opgezocht (locatie: <http://www.Four11.com/>), mail ik haar een vragenlijstje. Jack heeft me dan inmiddels geleerd dat de Scientology-documenten waar alles om draait (het zogenaamde Fishman-document) niet alleen regelmatig in de nieuwsgroep opduiken, maar ook zijn te downloaden op verschillende FTP-sites (zie kader Fishman). Scientology wil ook die sites aanpakken, maar de Internet-gemeenschap heeft daar iets op gevonden: iemand heeft een kopie van het Fishman-document op een server in Beijing gezet. Jack: "Laat Kobrin de Chinezen er maar eens van overtuigen dat ze het document moeten verwijderen."

Saillant detail van het Fishman-document is overigens dat het geen Scientology-document is, maar een openbaar rechtbankstuk waarin Scientology-teksten zijn opgenomen. Het complete stuk – case CV-91-6426 HLH (Tx) – is tegen betaling van nog geen veertig dollar te koop bij het Federal Courthouse, Central District of California. Dat komt zo: Steven Fishman, ex-Scientoloog, klapt in 1991 tegen Time

Magazine uit de school over frauduleuze praktijken die hij in opdracht van Scientology zou hebben gepleegd. Dat lees ik in een persverklaring van Fishman op <http://www.cs.cmu.edu/~dst/Fishman>.

Fishman's openbaringen resulteerden in een artikel met als kop: 'De florierende verering van hebzucht en macht'. De onderkop: 'geruïneerde levens, verloren fortuinen, federale misdaden'. Op <http://www.cybercom.net/~rnewman/scientology/madia/quill-11.91> lees ik dat de journalist na publicatie herhaaldelijk werd lastig gevallen en in de gaten werd gehouden door advocaten en zes privé-detectives. Uiteindelijk begon Scientology Time zwart te maken met dagelijkse advertenties in USA Today – een campagne die 3 miljoen dollar zou hebben gekost.

Fishman legt in een persverklaring uit dat hij in psychische problemen raakte en van Scientology opdracht kreeg zijn psychiater te



Het hoofdgebouw van de Scientology Church.

■

**“XS4ALL IS NET ALS ANDERE
INTERNET-GEBRUIKERS EN
-PROVIDERS SLACHTOFFER
GEWORDEN VAN
SCIENTOLOGY-PRAKTIJKEN”**

■

vermoorden (Scientology en psychologie verhouden zich als water en vuur). Later zou hij opdracht tot zelfmoord hebben gekregen. Fishman schrijft zijn psychische problemen toe aan 'mind control'-technieken van Scientology. Om dit te bewijzen legt hij de rechtbank de OT-levels voor, en deze worden opgenomen in het archiefmateriaal.

Dat archiefmateriaal is vrij opvraagbaar, maar Scientologen willen daar een stokje voor steken. De klerk van de rechtbank vertelt in de Washington Post van 19 augustus dat een groep van acht mensen ruim een jaar lang, iedere dag voordat de rechtbank open gaat, het document opvraagt om het de hele dag bij zich te houden. Een Scientology-directeur geeft dit in de krant toe.

Moordplannen

Terug naar Fishman. Hij wordt voor zijn misdaden veroordeeld en gaat de gevangenis in. Volgens zijn persverklaring voorkomen gevangenisbewaarders dat hij wordt vermoord. In de kast van medegevangene Luis Martinez vinden zij een steekwapen en Scientology-documenten.

Martinez is een Scientoloog uit Miami. Hem stond uitwijzing naar Cuba te wachten en Scientology zou hem juridische bijstand verlenen als hij Fishman zou vermoorden.

Als Fishman later ongeschonden op vrije voeten komt, volgt een civiel proces. Samen met FACT gaat Fishman in de verdediging. Bekendheden die Scientology gebruikt voor de goede naam riepen ze op om te getuigen. Dagvaardingen worden uitgedeeld aan onder andere Lisa Marie Presley (dochter van Elvis, vrouw van Michael Jackson) en John Travolta. Scientology ziet vervolgens af van het proces. Acteur en Scientology-aanhanger Tom Cruise wist de dagvaarding overigens te ontlopen door zich in het toilet te verstoppen (zie ook: Beroemdheden).

Scamizdat = zwendel

Jack heeft overigens een verzoek: of ik wil bewijzen dat ik journalist ben. Hij is 'nervus' door het laatste nieuws in alt.religion.scientology: iemand heeft de registratie van de telefoongesprekken van ene Grady Ward onder valse naam opgevraagd bij telefoonmaatschappij Pacific Bell. Gevreesd wordt dat Scientolog-aanhangers hem en zijn familie nu lastig vallen.

Na een e-mailtje van hoofdredacteur Oscar Kneppers is Jack gerustgesteld. Vanaf dat moment wisselen hij en ik dagelijks enkele mailtjes. Jack besteedt een groot deel van zijn vrije tijd aan de kwestie Scientology en het net. Hij meldt dat steeds meer mensen het Fishman-document versturen. Jack stuurt me statistische gegevens over alt.religion.scientology. Begin augustus zou 83,5 procent van alle bytes in de nieuwsgroep uit Scientology-documenten bestaan. Zonder al te veel moeite vind en download ik er een groot bestand; SCAMIZ9.ZIP. Eenmaal uitgepakt blijkt het bol te staan van Scientology-teksten en Scamizdat te heten, een samensmelting van 'scam' en 'samizdat'. Scam is slang voor zwendel en refereert aan de mil-

Fishman vrij verkrijgbaar via FTP

■ e FTP-sites waar het Fishman-document zich op bevindt zijn sites die een upload mogelijk maken, om Internetters in staat te stellen bestanden uit te wisselen. Bij het ter perse gaan van deze Net was het Fishman-document op onderstaande locaties te downloaden. De locaties van de sites veranderen regelmatig om Scientology een stap voor te blijven. De nieuwste locaties zijn in alt.religion.scientology te vinden.

<ftp://ftp.pasteur.fr/incoming/>
<ftp://ftp.gmd.de/incoming/>
<ftp://coll.uni-sb.de/incoming/>
<ftp://info.bta.net.cn/incoming/>
<ftp://ftp.uni-kl.de/incoming/>
<ftp://ftp.demos.su/incoming/>



alt.religion. scientology

Scott C. Goehring, een 26-jarige college-student uit Bloomington, Indiana, richtte de Usenet-nieuwsgroep alt.religion.scientology in 1991 op, als forum om Scientology aan de kaak te stellen. De eerste man van zijn vrouw zou een Scientoloog zijn. "Op het net komt de waarheid boven water. De kerk kan niet iedereen de mond snoeren. Ze kunnen niet alle 100 miljoen mensen dagvaarden die op het net zitten." Volgens Goehring zijn drie van iedere honderd deelnemers Scientologen, de rest tegenstanders, en heeft de nieuwsgroep 14.000 incidentele lezers. De meeste deelnemers noemen Scientology consequent Co\$ of Ch*rch.

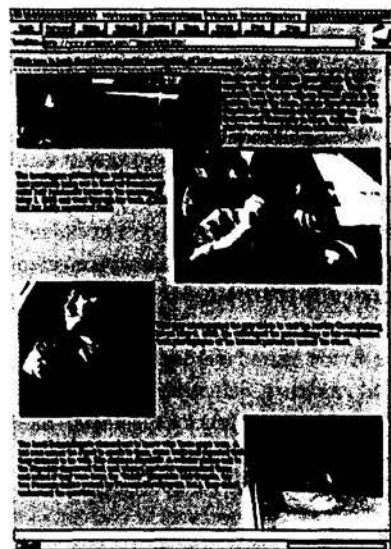
joenen die Scientology verdient. Samizdat was een praktijk in de voormalige Sovjet Unie: het privé drukken en verspreiden van literatuur die door het Sovjet-regime was verboden. Op een FTP-site download ik het Fishman-document en vind ik een grapje van de net-gemeenschap, die niet alleen bezorgd is over Scientology, maar er ook de humor van inziet. Het grapje is een spotprent in GIF-formaat; een foto van Kobrin waar een stuk tekst over communiceren met planten is ingeplakt. De tekst is die uit één van de OT-levels. Het herinnert me eraan Kobrin nog eens op mijn vragenlijstje te wijzen, want na enkele dagen heb ik haar antwoord nog niet ontvangen.

'Het lijkt wel science fiction'

Ik spreek even later met een medewerker van XS4All, die alleen wil praten als hij anoniem blijft. Want: "Scientology is een heel gevaarlijke organisatie. Voor je het weet heb je een proces aan je broek. Dat is een standaardprocedure van hen". Hij heeft 'een expert' onderzoek laten doen naar Scientology, en zegt: "Ik noem het geen kerk, ik noem het een bedrijf. Hun teksten, zeg maar hun bijbel: het lijkt wel science fiction". Hij vertelt dat de beheerder van de anonieme remailer van XS4All begin dit jaar een e-mailtje kreeg uit Amerika. Onlangs kwam er een brief via een Nederlandse advocaat met eenzelfde strekking: het versturen van Scientology-documenten via de remailer moet ophouden of we nemen juridische stappen.

"Wij hebben een principiële standpunt", zegt de medewerker, "Remailer moeten een kans krijgen, die kun je niet zomaar afschieten. Veel mensen kunnen alleen maar anoniem communiceren. Mensen bijvoorbeeld die HIV-positief zijn kunnen vaak niet onder hun eigen naam naar buiten treden vanwege hun carrière."

"Dat kort geding zal er waarschijnlijk wel



Foto's van en informatie over de Scientology privé-detectives.

komen, maar we zitten er niet over in. Hoe harder ze dreigen, hoe strijdlijstiger Internet-gebruikers worden. De publieke discussie over censuur op het Internet door Scientology zal erg interessant worden. XS4All is net als andere Internet-gebruikers en -providers slachtoffer geworden van Scientology-praktijken."

Huiszoekingsbevel

Johan 'Julf' Helsingius weet er alles van. Hij beheert de Finse remailer **anon.penet.fi** sinds 1992. Begin 1995 telt zijn service 200.000 geregistreerde gebruikers, en iedere dag worden er automatisch 7.000 mailtjes doorgestuurd. Begin februari van dit jaar komt de Finse politie met een huiszoekingsbevel bij hem aan de deur, omdat Scientology de identiteit van een klant wil weten. Op dezelfde dag verschijnen er berichten in een Zweedse krant over kinderporno die via de **anon.penet.fi** remailer verstuurd zou worden. Finse kranten pikken het verhaal op en de remailer staat in een kwaad daglicht. De artikelen in de kranten zijn gebaseerd op een onderzoek door Mats Wiklund van de Universiteit van Stockholm.

In een persverklaring van Julf (locatie: <http://www.sky.net/~sloth/sci/sci-index.html>) zet hij zijn vraagtekens bij het onderzoek, want de remailer laat geen grote bestanden en dus geen digitale foto's meer door. Julf en de Internet-gemeenschap gingen zelf op onderzoek uit en ontdekten dat het onderzoek van Wiklund onzorgvuldig is verricht, en dat de enige foto die zijn rapport vergezelde een betrekkelijk onschuldige foto was, met kinderen in een nudistenkamp. Bij nader onderzoek van Julf en

Iemand 'wissen' voor \$ 20.000

Scientologen zijn ervan overtuigd dat ieder mens onder invloed is van Xenu, die 60 biljoen jaren geleden Thetanen op de aardbol los liet. Die Thetanen zitten nog in ieder van ons en veroorzaken 'engrammen'. Scientology kan die wissen, zodat iemand 'clear' wordt. Dit gaat in stappen en die kosten geld. In het begin weinig, maar hoe hoger men komt (het doel is uiteindelijk Operating Thetan te worden) hoe meer men betaalt. De directeur van Scientology International zegt in de Washington Post dat leden daar tot 20.000 dollar voor betalen. Critici schatten het bedrag op 300.000 dollar. Het clear-proces kan lang duren, omdat Scientologen ervan overtuigd zijn dat er ook nog Thetanen uit vorige levens in ons zitten. Ook die moeten weg. En dat kost geld. Hubbard geloofde overigens sterk in reïncarnatie, en Scientologen zeggen dat Hubbard bij zijn dood zijn lichaam heeft laten vallen en terug zal keren.

De Church

aanhang bleek zelfs dat de foto's niet via Finland verstuurd waren maar uit Groot Brittannië kwamen, en dat de afkomst van de foto's vervalst was. Op dat punt ging de Internet-gemeenschap zich afvragen: wat zijn de motieven van de Zweedse onderzoeker? De gemeenschap had al snel het vermoeden dat het versturen van de foto's en de publiciteit er omheen een list zou zijn van Scientology, om zo de remailer in een kwaad daglicht te stellen.

Inval

Na ettelijke e-mails en een telefoontje belooft Kobrin mijn vragen zeer snel te beantwoorden. Maar er komt wat tussen. Op zaterdag 12 augustus is er een inval in het huis van ex-Scientoloog Arnoldo P. Lerma in Arlington, Virginia. In totaal tien mensen zetten zijn huis op de kop omdat Lerma het Fishman-document heeft gepost. Onder de tien mensen zijn twee gewapende agenten, twee computertechnici en een vrouw Kobrin. De computer, een scanner, diverse harde schijven, 400 floppies en zelfs muis en modem worden in beslag genomen. Arnie brengt de Internet-gemeenschap via IRC op de hoogte.

Helena Kobrin zegt twee dagen later in de New York Times: "Als deze documenten de kerk hebben verlaten, dan is dat omdat ze gestolen zijn". Lerma blijft er in de New York Times rustig onder: "Dit is het grote geheim aan het eind van de regenboog, en je kunt het bij de rechtbank krijgen voor 50 cent per pagina".

Overigens kreeg Arnie Lerma in november 1994 al een bezoekje van Eugene Ingram, een privé-detective voor Scientology, meldt Ron Newman op zijn WWW-pagina's 'The Church of Scientology vs. the Net'. Ook Grady Ward (wiens telefoongegevens onlangs werden opgevraagd) kreeg Ingram over de vloer. En niet lang daarna bezocht Ingram de moeder van Ward. Deze herkende hem van een foto en het Tacoma Police department maakte er een zaak van. In Florida zou een arrestatiebevel zijn uitgegeven omdat Ingram zich bij bezoeken heeft voorgedaan als een politieagent. Ingram zou bij het Los Angeles Police Department op straat zijn gezet omdat hij drugdealers tippte over invallen, en omdat hij een bijbaantje als souteneur had. Foto's van en informatie over Ingram en andere Scientology-detectives staan op <http://www.primenet.com/~lippart/pis.html>.

'Sorry Folks, party's over'

Na de inval bij Lerma ontstaat er weer beroering in alt.religion.scientology. Ook omdat het Fishman-document van de Chinese server is verdwenen. 'Sorry Folks, party's over', stond er plot-

in 1954 wordt de Scientology Church opgericht, en wereldwijd volgen vestigingen. Critici zeggen dat Hubbard de religieuze status wilde om zo onder het betalen van belastingen uit te komen. Volgens de New York Times heeft Scientology een betaalde staf van 13.000 mensen. Over het aantal aanhangers is onduidelijkheid: Scientology beweert 8 miljoen leden te hebben, anderen zeggen 50.000. Volgens de anonieme expert komt Scientology op het volgende neer: het is een hutspot van religie, science fiction en mind-control. In zijn boek Dianetics gebruikt Hubbard de term 'auditing' al. Auditing (aanhoren) is een moderne variant van de ouderwets christelijke biecht: zorg ervoor dat mensen hun problemen, geheimen, angsten en onzekerheden uitspreken, en je maakt ze van je afhankelijk. Scientology houdt haar teksten angstvallig geheim door middel van auteursrecht. Vreemd voor een kerk, die gewoonlijk maar wat graag het geloof wil verspreiden. Volgens Leisa Goodman is het om 'de religieuze technieken orthodox te houden'. Over het geloof meldt de expert onder andere dat er bij overhoringen gebruik wordt gemaakt van de zogenaamde E-meter, een door Hubbard zelf ontwikkelde leugendetector.

seling in alt.religion.scientology. De reden: de 64 Kbps-verbinding kon de grote vraag naar het Fishman-document niet aan, en de cyber-toegang voor heel China dreigde in gevaar te komen. Maar niet veel later is er weer een feestje in de nieuwsgroep: het Fishman-document bevindt zich in Rusland (locatie: <ftp://ftp.demos.su/incoming/>).

Rond die tijd ontvang ik de antwoorden van Helena K. Kobrin. De advocaat die zo druk zou zijn heeft voor een merkwaardige manier van reageren per e-mail gekozen: in plaats van een 'reply' te sturen (zodat de vragen uit mijn mailtje automatisch - en dus snel - in haar elektronische brief worden geplaatst) heeft zij de vragen opnieuw ingetikt en verminkt. Want termen als free flow of information en vrijheid van meningsuiting zijn geschrapt. En Kobrin schrijft meteen maar dat ik niets mag publiceren uit het openbare Fishman-document: "Als u dit materiaal publiceert, zal mijn cliënt genoodzaakt zijn passende juridische actie te ondernemen tegen u en uw uitgever om zijn rechten te beschermen."

In haar brief hangt Kobrin verder de vuile was van Netcom en Erlich en Fishman buiten. Ze noemt Steven Fishman een 'zware crimineel' en een 'beruchte leugenaar die allerlei aantijgingen tegen de kerk verzint'. Als Jack de opmerkingen van Kobrin heeft gelezen, doet hij ze af als 'dead agenting'. Hij verwijst mij vervolgens naar de semi-officiële Scientology WWW-pages van het hoofd Public Relations, Leisa Goodman (<http://www.theta.com/goodman/>).

Op de web-pagina's van Goodman heeft



**JACK HEEFT OVERIGENS
EEN VERZOEK: OF IK WIL
BEWIJZEN DAT IK
JOURNALIST BEN.
HIJ IS 'NERVEUS' DOOR
HET LAATSTE NIEUWS
IN ALT.RELIGION.
SCIENTOLOGY**



Kobrin een commentaar over computercriminaliteit geschreven. Ironisch, want Kobrin heeft zich zelf aan computercriminaliteit schuldig gemaakt. Zij stuurde een zogenaamde remove-group-message. Dat is een speciaal geformatteerde instructie om een hele nieuwsgroep te wissen. Dit mislukte, omdat de Usenet-systeembeheerders snel een commando verstuurden dat de groep hercreëerde.

Kobrin ontkent noch bevestigt dit verhaal in de antwoorden die ze mij stuurt, en schrijft dat ze slechts een verzoek heeft verstuurd naar de Usenet-systeembeheerders. Ze sloot het antwoord af met: "Mijn verzoek is niet meer aan de orde, maar de kwestie van het auteursrecht daarentegen wel".

Jack wijst mij op een brief die Kobrin eerder dit jaar naar Internet World magazine stuurde, omdat het tijdschrift haar om een verklaring voor de rm-message had gevraagd. Na veel

■

**IN PLAATS VAN EEN 'REPLY'
OP MIJN MAIL TE STUREN
HEEFT DE SCIENTOLOGY-
ADVOCATE MIJN VRAGEN
OPNIEUW INGETIKT EN
VERMIKNT**

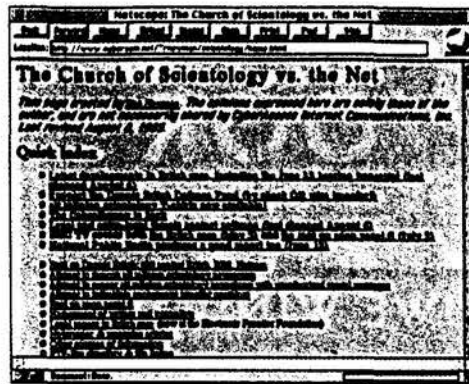
■

mooie woorden over auteursrecht geeft Kobrin in die brief impliciet toe: "We zijn niet van plan de 'remove group'-message voort te zetten als het geen passende methode is".

De medewerker van XS4All zegt: "Een bericht wissen dat niet van jou is, is strafbaar. Auteursrecht van berichten op het Internet ligt bij de gebruiker. Alleen de gebruiker heeft het recht zijn bericht te vernietigen, voordat dit automatisch gebeurt door de cancel-periode op een newshost".

'Geen politieagent spelen'

Andere Nederlandse Internet-providers scharen zich achter XS4All. De providers die zijn aangesloten bij branchevereniging NLIP, maar ook bijvoorbeeld Planet Internet. Hoofdredacteur Michiel Frackers: "Nu wordt duidelijk wat voor kerk dat is. Wij zijn tegen cancel messages en censuur. Iedereen moet kunnen zeggen wat ie wil. Dit soort problemen zal overigens nog blijven, met illegale software en kinderporno. Specifieke nieuwsgroepen die kinderporno bevatten geven wij trouwens niet door." Koos



de Heer van Knoware: "Als providers moeten we geen politieagent spelen, dat is tegen het principe van een provider. Wel moeten we ervoor oppassen dat we niet worden lamgelegd door e-mail-bombardementen, dus in die zin hebben we er belang bij dat onze gebruikers zich aan de netiquette houden. Een anonieme remailer is hetzelfde als anoniem een brief per post versturen. En wat ergens op een server staat, is niet het bezit van een provider maar van de gebruiker. Als er bij het postkantoor een pakje ligt is de PTT ook niet verantwoordelijk voor de inhoud".

Helena Kobrin zegt in de New York Times van 14 augustus over het Internet: "Er zijn mensen die denken dat het Internet een nieuw medium heeft gecreëerd waar alle regels verdwijnen, en dat is niet waar. Dingen gaan sneller op het Internet, en we zullen ze bijhouden".

Vlak voor de deadline hoor ik dat de beheerder van de anonieme remailer die op XS4All draaide de remailer heeft verplaatst. Het is nog onduidelijk of juridische stappen tegen XS4All zullen volgen. Overigens kan iedere gebruiker een remailer opstarten. En dus in de problemen komen als er via die remailer Scientology-documenten worden gepost.

Beroemdheden

De beroemde volgelingen van Hubbard zijn een verhaal apart. Het verhaal gaat terug naar 1955, als L. Ron Hubbard zijn gevolg opdracht geeft beroemdheden te winnen voor de kerk. Wie het lukte, kreeg een speciale training. Dit wordt beschreven in *The Scandal Of Scientology*, een boek van Paulette Cooper. Cooper schrijft over het zogenaamde Celebrity Center in Californië dat beroemdheden uit Hollywood moet aantrekken, volgens Cooper om jongeren te interesseren voor Scientology. Na het verschijnen van het boek startte Scientology Operation PC Freakout, een lastercampagne tegen Paulette Cooper, met als doel haar in de gevangenis of een inrichting te krijgen. Scientology beschikt inmiddels, na er heel veel geld voor betaald te hebben, over het auteursrecht van het boek.

Ook Jack heeft informatie over de sterren. In een MTV-show (new Religions: The Cult Question, voor het eerst uitgezonden in juni 1995) waarin Scientology aan bod kwam, verschenen Tom Cruise, Kristie Alley, Juliette Lewis en John Travolta op TV, terwijl ze praiseliederen zongen. John Travolta zou hebben gezegd: 'Ik denk dat het de belangrijkste beweging op de planeet is'.

Scientology in Nederland

in Nederland (Nieuwezijds Voorburgwal in Amsterdam) heeft de Scientology Church een religieuze status, en er zijn verschillende instellingen door het hele land, waaronder de Lafayette basisschool (ook in Amsterdam). In de jaren zeventig werd in Nederland een commissie opgericht om Scientology te onderzoeken. Er bleek volgens de eerder genoemde expert een Scientoloog onder de leden te zitten, en door onderlinge spanningen en ruzies kwam er nooit een eindrapport. Begin jaren tachtig werd een aantal Scientologen door de politie opgepakt, toen bij een verkeerscontrole bleek dat zij in het bezit waren van gestolen papieren uit de archieven van het Nationaal Centrum voor Geestelijke Volksgezondheid in Utrecht.

Overheid heeft bij sektes het nakijken

door Ruud van Haastrecht

ZOETERMEER – De collectieve (zelf)moord van een sekte, zoals in Zwitserland van eergisteren, roept telkens opnieuw de vraag op of de overheid niet eerder actief moet ingrijpen bij sekten. De overheid heeft daar maar heel weinig mogelijkheden voor, zegt mr. dr. T. A. M. Witteveen, algemeen secretaris van de Nationale raad voor de volksgezondheid.

Begin jaren tachtig deed hij in opdracht van de Tweede Kamer onderzoek naar de vraag in hoeverre het lidmaatschap van een sekte schadelijk is voor de geestelijke gezondheid van individuen. Sindsdien geldt als sekte-deskundige en wordt gebeld als er een sekte weer in opspraak komt, zoals nu de Orde van de Zonnetempel, of vorig jaar de Branch Davidians-sekte van David Koresh, die haar boerderij in Waco, Texas, in brand stak. De aanleiding voor het instellen van het parlementaire onderzoek was net zo'n afschuwelijk voorval als nu in Zwitserland. In 1978 pleegde de sekte van Jim Jones collectief zelfmoord in het Zuidamerikaanse land Guyana, nadat daar een Amerikaanse regeringscommissie in Jonestown op bezoek was geweest, die wilde bezien of het allemaal wel gezond was wat er onder Jones' leiding gebeurde. De zelfdoding van bijna duizend sekteleiden veroorzaakte niet alleen wereldwijd een

schok, de vraag rees bovendien of dit elders niet ook kon gebeuren. In Nederland stond het sekte-fenomeen in die tijd al volop in de belangstelling door de opkomst van de Scientology-kerk, de Hare Krishna-beweging en de 'Moonies'. Om die reden beperkte de Tweede Kamer zich tot dit soort nieuwe sekten, die in de jaren zestig of later waren ontstaan, en liet ze sekten als de Jehovah's Getuigen erbuiten, waar volgens Witteveen „ook best wel wat op- en aanmerkingen bij te maken vallen". Verder ging het onderzoek over de vraag waar de grenzen liggen voor de Nederlandse overheid als zij beleid zou willen voeren op dit terrein.

Het onderzoeksrapport 'Overheid en nieuwe religieuze bewegingen' concludeerde dat de overheid niet zoveel kan op dit gebied. Toch zijn er grenzen aan de godsdienstvrijheid. Niemand mag op basis van zijn of haar geloof de wet overtreden. Zo is het brengen van een mensenoffer absoluut verboden. En als hindoës etensresten in de rivier gooien worden ze zonder pardon op de bon geslingerd wegens vervuiling van het oppervlaktewater. Ex-sekteleiden staan ook niet helemaal machteloos als ze hun gram willen halen. Als ze in het verleden bij voorbeeld onder psychische druk grote schenkingen hebben gedaan aan hun sekte, dan is het mogelijk dat bedrag via de rechter terug te vorderen.

• Vervolg op pagina 10: Waar trek je de grens?

Funshopping of rus

door Marcel t

DEN HAAG – „Wie ben ik om een moreel oordeel over *funshopping* te vellen?" zegt PvdA-Kamerlid Marjet van Zuijlen op de vraag of de overheid niet geroepen is de zondag te waarborgen als rustdag, een dag waarop de commercie stilstaat. Zij vindt deze overheidstaak uit de tijd. Van Zuijlen steunt daarom van harte het voornemen van minister Wijers (economische zaken) om winkels meer vrijheid te gunnen op zondag open te zijn.

Het Kamerlid zegt geen probleem te hebben met *funshopping* op zondag. Al staan de kooplustigen in lange files voor de woonboulevards, zij onthoudt zich bewust van een moreel oordeel: „Het is voor veel mensen een echt uitje. *Funshopping* hoort bij het leven. Mensen zeggen wel eens dat sport de belangrijkste vrije-tijdsbesteding is. Nou, dat is helemaal niet zo. Vrienden bezoeken en winkelen zijn de belangrijkste vormen van vrije-tijdsbesteding. Laten we eerlijk zijn, ik vind het óók leuk."

Wijers (D66) buigt zich over een reeks mogelijkheden om de Winkelsluitingswet te liberaliseren. De regeringscoalitie van PvdA, VVD en D66 wil de strakke regels losser maken om

recht te doen aan de arbeiden van deze tijd.

Eén van Wijers' ideeën is over te laten of de winkelen op zondag open mogelijk dit toe:

Marjet Van Zuijlen de heiliging van de winkel is niet meer

„De nationale overheid heeft taak meer. De heiliging van de winkel is niet meer zo groot. De winkelkeer per jaar op zondag gemeenten vinden allerlei plaatsen. Deze stap verandering van de cultuur die invloed van de ontkerking van de winkel heeft een andere invulling

Het CDA-Kamerlid Ries Sr

Van den Heuvel treedt terug bij de omroep

Van onze mediaredactie

AMSTERDAM – Beoogd voorzitter van de Nederlandse Programma Stichting (NPS) A. van den Heuvel heeft zijn functie neergelegd, om-

dat is gebleken dat hij onvoldoende steun onder de medewerkers geniet. Dit blijkt uit een mededeling van NOS-voorzitter Van der Louw aan de ondernemingsraad.

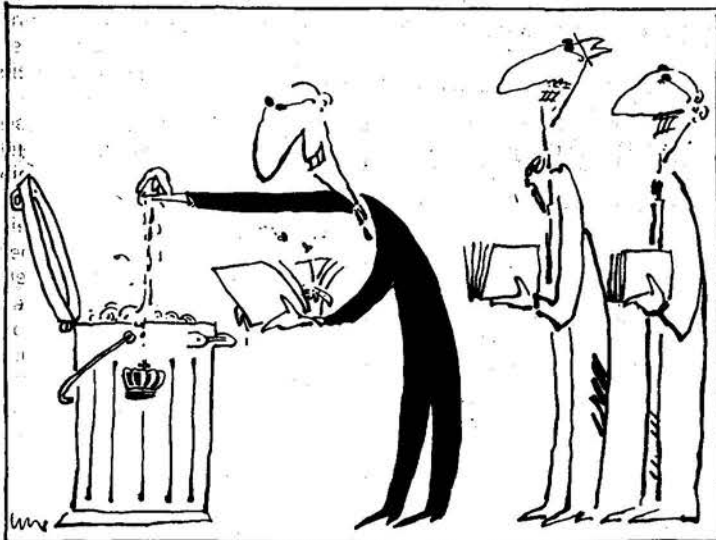
De crisis ontstond nadat bekend was geworden, dat de toekomstige NPS (een afsplitsing van de NOS, die zich vanaf 1 januari gaat bezighouden met cultuur, minderheden en jeugd) een groot deel van de culturele programma's zou uitbesteden aan het commerciële ID-TV. Van den Heuvel had daarmee ingestemd buiten de NOS-directie om. Ook het ministerie van OCW wist van niks. De NOS-ondernemingsraad zegde het vertrouwen in Van den Heuvel toen op. In die situatie liepen programma's gevaar die tot 1 januari waren voorzien. De NOS-directie had bij wijze van wapenstilstand de medewerkers van de afdeling culturele programma's opgedragen hun werk op basis van zakelijke verhoudingen te hervatten. Staatssecretaris Nuis (OCW) beslist binnenkort over de opvolging van Van den Heuvel, die van 1985 tot 1993 vice-voorzitter van de NOS was en daarvoor voorzitter van de Vara.

Veronica: morgen besluit commercie

HILVERSUM (ANP) – Veronica maakt morgen bekend of de omroep het publieke bestel verlaat en commercieel wordt. Het formele besluit daarover wordt genomen door de verenigingsraad, waarna het personeel wordt ingelicht.

De andere publieke omroepen zijn inmiddels in hoofdlijnen eens over een gezamenlijk plan om het programmatische gat te vullen dat door een eventueel vertrek van Veronica op Nederland 2 zou vallen. Het gaat daarbij gemiddeld om ruim zestien uur per week. Daarnaast zou een kleine zestig uur radiozendtijd vrijkomen. In het NOS-bestuur moet daar nog verder over worden gesproken.

TROLUW 7-10'94



'Waar trek je de grens?'

VERVOLG VAN PAGINA 1

Voor minderjarige kinderen van sekteleiden zijn de regels van de kinderbescherming van toepassing. Wanneer een kind met geestelijke of lichamelijke ondergang wordt bedreigd, kunnen de ouders uit de ouderlijke macht worden ontzet. Maar, beaamt Witteveen, het probleem is vaak dat er niemand is die het kind bij de kinderbescherming aanmeldt. Daarbij komt dat de overheid in 1983 lelijk de mist is ingegaan, toen de politie op aangifte van ex-leden een inval deed bij de Tai Chi-sekte in Amsterdam en twintig kinderen aan de ouderlijke macht onttrok. Achteraf bleek de informatie onjuist en moesten de kinderen aan hun ouders worden teruggegeven.

„Het Openbaar ministerie had zich op sleeptouw laten nemen door ex-leden”, zegt Witteveen. Hij beklemtoont dat je voorzichtig moet zijn om op basis van uitspraken van ex-leden een religieuze beweging als geheel te diskwalificeren. Ex-leden, althans degenen die zelf zijn toegetreden, geven een subjectief beeld dat ook dient om hun eigen gedrag te rechtvaardigen waarvan ze later afstand hebben genomen. Witteveen en zijn begeleidingscommissie kostte het indertijd ruim een paar miljoen te betalen. De laatste sektes zover kregen dat die openhartig wilden reageren op de informatie van de oud-leden. Witteveen bestrijdt dat de sekten zo hun stoepje schoon konden vegen en de commissieleden rustig gingen slapen. „In verschillende organisaties bleek wel degelijk wat aan de hand. De Scientology-kerk bijvoorbeeld heeft wel degelijk zaken gecorrigeerd: de onvrijheid, de druk in het systeem op mensen om te voorkomen dat ze hun eigen weg gingen. We hebben daar zelfs zelfs een uitiem dreigement gebruikt, namelijk door te zeggen dat de mate van onvrijheid in een organisatie zo groot kan zijn dat je je kan afvragen of de vrijheid van godsdienst niet in het geding is en dat je die organisatie als geheel tegen de wet zou moeten beschouwen. Dat gaat wel heel ver; het zou ertoe kunnen leiden dat een organisatie als uiterste consequentie zou kunnen worden verboden. En dat is tot nu toe eigenlijk alleen aan de orde waar een organisatie dient als dekmantel voor criminele praktijken. Maar het ging er ons om dat mensen in zo'n

organisatie zich realiseren dat de vrijheid van godsdienst geen vrijheid is om binnen zo'n organisatie maar te doen en te laten wat men wil. Concreet houdt dat in dat er geen ontoelaatbare psychische druk mag worden toegepast en voldoende vrijheid gelaten moet worden aan mensen om hun eigen beslissingen te nemen.”

Sekten die het gevaar lopen te ontsporen kenmerken zich volgens Witteveen door een charismatisch leider, geslotenheid, strakke regels, psychische druk en extatische rituelen. Er zijn veel van dat soort geloofsgroepen, ook in Nederland. „Je loopt dus een risico”, geeft Witteveen toe. „De vraag is hoe groot dat risico is. Er zijn betrekkelijk weinig voorbeelden bekend van hele grote ontsporingen. Een tweede vraag is of hier een rol ligt voor de overheid. De overheid kan zich nooit een oordeel veroorloven over de leer, dus die zou zich moeten richten op algemene risicofactoren. Alleen, waar trek je de grens? Welke factoren pak je aan en welke groep van organisaties. Waar ligt voor de overheid het verschil tussen een kleine religieuze sekte en bijvoorbeeld de rooms-katholieke kerk. Zo stuitten wij tijdens ons onderzoek op het fenomeen van de 'eilanddepressie', een term die wordt gebruikt voor een vorm van depressiviteit onder zware gereformeerden op de Zeeuwse eilanden. Dan heb je het leden van een geloofsgemeenschap van wie elke Nederlander zal zeggen: ja dat is ook een onderdeel van onze Nederlandse cultuur. Toch zie je daar eenzelfde relatie tussen geloofsopvoeding en latere psychische problematiek als wordt toegeschreven aan meer exotische groepen.”

Ook daar, als de geestelijke volksgezondheid in het geding is, heeft de overheid geen actieve rol. Volgens de wet moet ze de toegankelijkheid van gezondheidsvoorzieningen waarborgen, en meer niet. „Wat zich bij oud-sekteleden voordoet, is niet zo specifiek dat het niet onder de gebruikelijke categorieën valt”, zegt Witteveen. „Je hebt het dan over angsten, fobieën, eenzaamheid, desoriëntatie. Aan de andere kant: de burger is mondig genoeg. En het is niet per definitie zo dat de gevolgen van extreme godsdienstigheid alleen maar negatief zijn. Het heeft, om maar iets te noemen, enkele van onze beste schrijvers opgeleverd.”

Ruud van Haastrecht



DRIE OP VRIJDAG

MARIANNE SUURMOND-VONKEMAN

„God kastijdt alleen zonen en dochteren en geen bastaarden. Ik wens u een ontvankelijk hart voor Gods genade.” Dit stond op een kaart die ik ontving nadat ik een ongeval had gehad.

De kaart is mij dierbaar. Niet alleen omdat de persoon die het schreef mij dierbaar is. Niet alleen omdat ik deze taal zo prachtig en rijk vind. Maar ook vanwege de gedachte die erachter zit. Al heb ik er ook mijn bedenkingen bij.

'God kastijdt zijn zonen', zegt de spreukendichter, en na hem de Hebreeënschrijver. Het is een wijdverspreide gedachte (bij mijn weten in alle godsdiensten voorkomend) dat negatieve gebeurtenissen begrepen kunnen worden als een pittig lesje van God.

De bovenstaande tekst zou dan betekenen: moeilijke tijden zijn een teken van Gods liefde omdat zonder tegenspoed en lijden onze menselijkheid niet tot volle bloei komt. Toch gaat het in dit bijbelwoord om iets anders: namelijk om het lering trekken uit eigen foute daden. Als je zondigt, berokken je schade niet alleen aan je medemens maar ook aan jezelf. En de gevolgen daarvan zul je ondervinden. Verzet je daar niet tegen; maar leer het te verstaan als een aanwijzing van God hoe je het beter kan doen. Deze wijsheid geldt voor personen maar ook voor volken: Europese koloniale winsten in vorige eeuwen vragen nu om herstelbetalingen in de vorm van vluchtelingenhelp en kwijtschelding van schuld aan Derde Wereldlanden.

Dat lijden veroorzaakt wordt door God, is echter geen christelijke gedachte (zo leerden we van het jodendom). We groeien niet door onze tegenspoed, maar door wat te doen aan de tegenspoed van anderen. Ik heb het niet nodig om allerlei ellendigs mee te maken om als persoon uit te rijpen. Alles wat er te leren valt, is te leren door voldoende inlevingsvermogen en daadkracht ten aanzien van mensen die lijden.

Voor een dergelijke verbondenheid is geen mystieke verlichting nodig maar het simpele erkennen van onze verantwoordelijkheid. Zover ik het begrijp is dit misschien wel de kern van wat – ook binnen het christendom – heidenom genoemd moet worden: de

gedachte dat lijden en kwad in zichzelf betekenis zouden hebben. De betekenis zit echt niet in het lijden maar als het wre aan de buitenkant. Namelijk in de uitwerking die het kan hebben. Negatieve gebeurtenissen kunnen soms een positieve uitwerking krijgen, maar dat is geen kwestie van oorzaak en gevolg. Daar is nog iets meer voor nodig. In de eerste plaats een rechtvaardige, creatieve en gelovige respons op de situatie, niet alleen van het slachtoffer, maar ook, en misschien nog meer, van de omgeving. Zo'n respons creëert een soort open ruimte om het kwaad heen. Een niet-ingevulde, ontvankelijke ruimte waarin er meer is dan kwaad en lijden. In der ruimte kan het soms zijn dat er betekenis gehoord wordt en betekenis gegeven wordt aan dat wain zichzelf zinloos is. En dat heet wel met God te maken. Dat het in bijbeltaal: genade.

Een ontvankelijk hart voor Gods genade. Ruimte voor de gein die van God komt. Voor het onverwachte geschenk waar je niets voor hebt gedaan maar dat je zo maar tegenvalt. Zoals het leven en alles wat in het leven is moeite waard is, een geschenk van de Ene God die ondubbelzinnig goed is. Het gaat er in om leven en in de wereld niet om dat geluk en verdriet als een optelsom geteld moeten worden.

Het gaat – veel radikaler – om een wereld waar de genade gein van God de toon uitstraakt. „Ik weet een planeet waaraan een vuurrode meneer woont” zegt de kleine Prins (uit het gelijknamige boekje van de Saint-Exupéry). „Hij heeft nooit van iemand gehouden maar altijd alleen maar optelsommen gemaakt. En het is jij zegt hij de hele dag: 'Ik ben een ernstig man. Ik ben een ernstig man.' En dan zwelt hij van rots. Maar dat is geen man, dat is een paddestoel!”

Marianne Suurmond is hervormd predikant in Vlaardingen.

Jul 6 1994 07:44:09 structure Page 1

Message-ID: <153745227061994@anon.penet.fi>
 Path: sun4nl!EU.net!news.eunet.fi!anon.penet.fi
 Newsgroups: alt.religion.scientology
 From: an41246@anon.penet.fi
 X-Anonymous-To: alt.religion.scientology
 Organization: Anonymous contact service
 Reply-To: an41246@anon.penet.fi
 Date: Sat, 25 Jun 1994 08:29:04 UTC
 Subject: Command Structure of the Church
 Lines: 283

Hey Heber, remember me?

THE MANAGEMENT STRUCTURE OF THE CHURCH OF SCIENTOLOGY.

The Church of Scientology supports two separate organizations that are completely autonomous from its ethics and justice bodies or even its control. These organizations control the trademark and copyright usage and thus control the philosophical source of Dianetics and Scientology, namely L. Ron Hubbard.

These two organizations have no governing authority over the Scientology management save for the fact that they can deny the Church of Scientology the right to deliver books, services or other related philosophical material by way of trademark and copyright laws. These organizations are:

1.) RELIGIOUS TECHNOLOGY CENTER

Sub network: The INSPECTOR GENERAL NETWORK

2.) AUTHOR SERVICES

Definitions:

THE RELIGIOUS TECHNOLOGY CENTER has complete control over the Dianetics and Scientology trade and service marks. Dianetics and Scientology can only be legally delivered with the permission of the RTC. The church, in exchange for the license agreement, must pay the RTC a royalty and adhere to certain philosophical standards. The chairman of the RTC is David Miscavige.

THE INSPECTOR GENERAL NETWORK ensures that the trademarks and service marks are being delivered to a precise set of standards. If the delivering body does not conform to those standards, the legal right to deliver Dianetics and Scientology is denied.

AUTHOR SERVICES controls all the copyrights of L. Ron Hubbard. Any fiction work, philosophical work, Dianetics or Scientology book, tape or course pack that is sold is done so with the permission and a royalty payment to Author services. Chairman of Author Services: Norman Starkey.

The Church of Scientology has three stratas of management. Top management, upper middle management and middle management.

I will outline the order and sequence of the COMMAND CHART of SCIENTOLOGY with full and complete definitions of each Organization following the outline.

TOP MANAGEMENT CONSISTS OF :

INTERNATIONAL MANAGEMENT [INT MANAGEMENT]:

- 1.) Watchdog Committee [WDC]
- 2.) Executive Director Int. & Senior Executive Strata
- 3.) Commodore's Messenger Organization Int. [CMO INT]

Jul 6 1994 07:44:09 structure Page 2

4.) Int. Network of Computer Organized Management. [INCOMOM]

Summary: The International Coordination Committee.

Definitions of TOP MANAGEMENT:

WATCHDOG COMMITTEE: The Watchdog committee is an inspection and police organization which makes sure things get managed. Quality control with an edge.

EXECUTIVE DIRECTOR INT & SENIOR EXECUTIVE STRATA: They coordinate the establishment of staff workers, books, marketing, prices, materials, the influx of new people into Scientology and the international coordination of the Scientology network. They do not manage the lower organizations on the "front lines." (e.g. Local missions or local churches in a neighborhood.) They provide the functions and programs so those churches on the "front lines" can prosper or fail.

COMMODORE'S MESSENGER ORGANIZATION INT: Formerly a private staff for the late L. Ron Hubbard. He used these messengers to relay orders and collect information. Currently it is now an observation and enforcement organization carrying out orders for the Watchdog committee.

INT NETWORK OF COMPUTER ORGANIZED MANAGEMENT: It's overall intention is to computerize management thus making it more effective and quicker.

UPPER MIDDLE MANAGEMENT CONSISTS OF:

FLAG COMMAND BUREAUX

Some of the networks contained in FCB:

- a.) Office of Special Affairs INT. [OSA INT]
- b.) Finance Network
- c.) LRH Communicator International
- d.) LRH Public Relations

- 1.) SCIENTOLOGY MISSIONS INT [SMT]
- 2.) WORLD INSTITUTE OF SCN. ENTERPRISES INT. [WISE]
- 3.) A.B.L.E. INT [Acronym translation unknown.]
- 4.) GOLDEN ERA PRODUCTIONS [GOLD]

a.) CMO INTERNATIONAL EXTENSION UNIT [CMO IXU]

They are an observation and enforcement organization which reports directly to CMO INT who then reports to the WATCHDOG COMMITTEE when asked or needed.

Summary: Management Coordination Committee

Definitions of UPPER MIDDLE MANAGEMENT:

THE FLAG COMMAND BUREAUX ensures that the policies, programs, plans, etc. of TOP MANAGEMENT get disseminated to all the Dianetics and Scientology organizations worldwide. Since Scientology is a worldwide religion/business it's no easy task. Hence, LIAISON OFFICES have been established on a continental basis to assist FCB. These LIAISON OFFICES not only deliver and coordinate the orders but they gather up international statistics, do evaluations, collect royalty payments, etc. and forward them up to INT MANAGEMENT. (Royalty payments are between 10% - 15%)

OFFICE OF SPECIAL AFFAIRS is the legal arm of the church. That includes defense and attack. Also included in the OSA is the handling of the licensing of trademarks as overseen by the RTC. The infamous "Elaine Siegel letter" originated from this branch.

FINANCE NETWORK: They ensure that the financial policies as laid down by L. Ron Hubbard are applied exactly as stated on all echelons.

LRH COMMUNICATOR INTERNATIONAL: L. RON HUBBARD died in January of 1986. Before

Jul 6 1994 07:44:09

structure

Page 3

his death they communicated any new philosophical work to the Scientology world. Currently they still do the same thing, distribute LRH philosophical texts, tapes, and letters.

LRH PUBLIC RELATIONS: Title says it all and they are still doing public relations for L.Ron Hubbard.

SCIENTOLOGY MISSIONS INT: An administrative body that handles the distribution of Mission Franchises to potential Mission Holders. They also coordinate the programs, plans, orders etc. as so ordered by INT MANAGEMENT. A Mission Franchise goes for a \$30,000 franchise fee.

WORLD INSTITUTE OF SCM. ENTERPRISES: The purpose of WISE is to disseminate L. Ron Hubbard business technology into the business community. WISE INT is an administrative body who manages the WISE Network.

A.B.L.E. INTERNATIONAL [Acronym translation unknown.]: ABLE handles the social programs that reach into the community. Programs like NARCONON: (A drug rehab program.), any other study programs for school and what not. ABLE INT is an administrative body that ensures the policies, programs, plans, etc. get disseminated. They have a liaison channel with INT MANAGEMENT but generally cater to programs that have no overt church interaction.

GOLDEN ERA PRODUCTIONS: Manufacturers of the HUBBARD ELECTROMETER, or e-meter. The e-meter is a diagnostic tool that an AUDITOR (One who listens.), uses when doing Dianetic or Scientology therapy. It is used for locating areas of spiritual upset or hidden transgressions. GOLD also makes technical training films to train AUDITORS. They also make films for dissemination purposes too.

MIDDLE MANAGEMENT CONSISTS OF:

- 1.) FLAG SERVICE ORG/FLAG CREW ORG
- 2.) CELEBRITY CENTRE INT.
- 3.) CONTINENTAL LIAISON OFFICE
- 4.) SCM. MISSIONS INT. CONTINENTAL
- 5.) WISE CONTINENTAL
- 7.) A.B.L.E. CONTINENTAL.

a.) CMO CONTINENTAL (net work contained within.)

They are an observation and enforcement organization which reports directly to CMO INT who then reports to the WATCHDOG COMMITTEE when asked or needed.

Summary: Continental Management Committee.

Definitions of MIDDLE MANAGEMENT:

FLAG SERVICE ORGANIZATION: FSO is the "Mother of all Scientology churches." Scientology has a laid out path to "enlightenment and beyond" which is known as THE BRIDGE. Churches and missions on the local level can only deliver designated portions of that BRIDGE. ADVANCED ORGANIZATIONS are allowed to deliver even more portions but FLAG is allowed to deliver 99% of the this BRIDGE. The last 1% is delivered on a Scientology cruise ship called the FREEMINDS. (Yes, a cruise ship. I'm not kidding!)

FLAG CREW ORGANIZATION: Can only wager a guess here. They take care of the FSO crew by housing and feeding them.

CELEBRITY CENTRE INTERNATIONAL: CELEBRITY CENTRES are churches catering to artists, entertainers and opinion leaders. CELEBRITY CENTRE INT is an administrative body that ensures the policies, programs, plans, etc. of FLAG COMMAND BUREAU get disseminated to all the CELEBRITY CENTRE organizations worldwide.

CONTINENTAL LIAISON OFFICE: LIAISON OFFICES have been established on a continental basis to assist FLAG COMMAND BUREAU. These LIAISON OFFICES not only deliver and coordinate the orders from FCB but they gather up international statistics, do evaluations, collect royalty payments, etc. and forward them up

Jul 6 1994 07:44:09

structure

Page 4

to INT MANAGEMENT. (Royalty payments are between 10% - 15%)

SMI CONTINENTAL: Same as the above LIAISON office but with the Scientology MISSIONS network only.

WISE CONTINENTAL: WISE is a business dissemination same as the above LIAISON office but with the Scientology MISSIONS network only.

ABLE INTERNATIONAL: A LIAISON office or community out reach programs.

BELOW ALL THREE OF THE MANAGEMENT STRATAS ARE:

- 1.) Local Scientology Organizations
- 2.) Local Scientology Missions
- 3.) Local WISE Groups
- 4.) A.B.L.E.

Summary: The worldwide Scientology network

DEFINITIONS:

LOCAL SCIENTOLOGY CHURCHES: can deliver Dianetic and Scientology therapy; known as auditing, and Dianetic and Scientology auditor training only up to a certain level. Then, if the person wants more auditing or training he would go to what is called an ADVANCED ORGANIZATION. There he could continue.

LOCAL SCIENTOLOGY MISSIONS: can deliver Dianetic and Scientology therapy; known as auditing and basic Dianetic and Scientology courses designed for the new person.

WISE GROUPS: Educate the business person on L. Ron Hubbard business technology.

ABLE: Handles social programs like NARCONON, a drug rehab center and other community outreach programs.

OTHER SCIENTOLOGY RELATED ORGANIZATIONS.

INTERNATIONAL ASSOC. OF SCIENTOLOGISTS: If you are to be a Scientologist actively doing Scientology you have to be a member of this organization or services are denied to you. A lifetime membership costs \$2,000 and a yearly costs \$300.

I-HELP: A licensing branch to AUDITORS who wish to operate independently from a staff position in the church. I-HELP is also a royalty collection agency charging fifteen percent for the licensing right to deliver Dianetics and Scientology.

BRIDGE PUBLICATIONS: They print up and distribute all of the books and tapes of Dianetics and Scientology. They work very closely with AUTHOR SERVICES. Royalties are paid to author services via Bridge.

CITIZENS COMMISSION ON HUMAN RIGHTS: A Scientology front organization that has as its sole purpose to harass psychiatry and drug manufacturers of "psyche drugs." (e.g. Ritalin, Prozac and others.)

The cumulative Church grosses about a third of a billion dollars a year. (1/3 of a billion!)

The assets of the church exceed 400 million and are probably closer to half a billion. (1/2 billion dollars in assets.)

The average staff member who is in the Sea Organization makes \$25.00 a week and has no medical, dental or workman's comp insurance. If the church

Jul 6 1994 07:44:09

structure

Page 5

could take 62 million of that 1/3 of a billion dollars annually, the average SEA ORG STAFF MEMBER could be paid \$25,000 dollars a year.

The average SEA ORG MEMBER is so dedicated that they will relinquish the right to bear children and work some 70 to 80 hours a week for the cause. They are very good people and they have made this organization into a multinational corporation where the upper execs, like David Miscavige and Norman Starkey, live "high on the hog" and pull in \$100,000 per year with all expenses paid. (ref: 501C Form filed by the CofScn 1992. David Miscavige made \$68K, his wife made nearly \$32K.

QUESTION AUTHORITY!

To find out more about the anon service, send mail to help@anon.penet.fi. Due to the double-blind, any mail replies to this message will be anonymized, and an anonymous id will be allocated automatically. You have been warned. Please report any problems, inappropriate use etc. to admin@anon.penet.fi.

structure

3

de zittende
rdamse PvdA-
ouders keren na de
nde verkiezingen niet
in de gemeenteraad
Volgens terugtrekkend
ouder L. Genet is er
r geen sprake van
op of een zinkend schip,
van een generatie-
ling. 'Let maar op, bij de
nde raadsverkiezingen
de PvdA twaalf tot
ien zetels.'

por Peter van den Berg

EGLOOP? Grote schoonmaak
misschien? De 'eerste man' van
dA-fractie in Amsterdam, wet-
r Louis Genet (43), maakt een
nd gebaar. 'Ho, ho, wacht even,

daarvan is absoluut geen sprake. Je
moet het zien als een generatiewisse-
ling. De politiek, ook die van de PvdA,
wordt in de grote steden van Neder-
land gedomineerd door veertigers. Dat
een aantal PvdA'ers in Amsterdam nu
plaats maakt voor een nieuwe genera-
tie is logisch. Het zou me niet verras-
sen als ook in andere Nederlandse ste-
den meer PvdA'ers binnenkort de af-
weging maken van blijven of gaan.'

De drie zittende Amsterdamse wet-
houders, Genet (volkshuisvesting),
A. Wildekamp (sociale zaken) en
P. Jonker (economische zaken) heb-
ben één voor één te kennen gegeven
niet op de kandidatenlijst voor de ko-
mende raadsverkiezingen van maart
volgend jaar te willen voorkomen. Jon-
ker (43) kwam maandag met een ver-
klaring: 'Er lopen in de Amsterdamse
PvdA kennelijk velen rond met de ge-
dachte dat ik weliswaar een goede wet-
houder ben geweest, die ook inhoudelij-
k meestal op de goede lijn zat, maar
dat men op mij persoonlijk is uitgeke-
ken. In zo'n klimaat heb ik er geen zin
in, om nog weer voor een nieuwe perio-
de van vier jaar bij te tekenen.'

Zijn collega Wildekamp (44) maakte
eind vorige week bekend niet te willen
terugkeren op het wethouderspluche.
'De vernieuwing die de partij voor-
staat, spoort mooi met een persoonlijk
door mij genomen besluit om op te
stappen', zei ze. Genet meldde in juli al
dat zijn besluit had 'moeten rijpen',
maar dat dit het juiste moment was de
'vernieuwing van de partij, ook in per-
sonele zin, alle kansen te geven'.

'Je moet het allemaal nuchter trace-
ren', spreekt Genet namens zijn colle-
ga's. 'De keus van Wildekamp is welo-
verwogen geweest. Ikzelf ben zestien
jaar raadslid, waarvan acht jaar wet-
houder, geweest. Ik ga mezelf niet be-
langrijk maken, dat ik onmisbaar zou
zijn, zo zit ik niet in elkaar. Voor Jon-
ker ligt het anders, gevoeliger. Er ge-
beuren dingen in de stad waarin Jonker
zich niet kan vinden. Hij legt de nad-
ruk op de ontwikkeling van de zuid-
as, in plaats van de IJ-as. Maar voor
alle drie geldt de vraag: hoe vullen we
de term vernieuwing concreet in? Het
antwoord is dat het nu goed is dat de
fakkel eens wordt overgenomen.'

Tussen de rampzalig verlopen raads-

verkiezingen van 1990 - een terugval
van 21 naar twaalf zetels - en nu is de
PvdA in Amsterdam vijf wethouders
kwijtgeraakt. Van der Vliet trok zijn
conclusies uit de verkiezingsnederlaag;
de alom gemaardeerde wethouder Etty
werd op een chaotische lente-avond
door het gewest Amsterdam de laan
uitgestuurd. En drieënehalf jaar la-
ter geven Genet, Jonker en Wildekamp
er de brui aan.

'Voor ons drieën luidde de vraag of
het logisch was na zoveel jaar wethou-
derschap nog door te gaan. Hoe plu-
chevast zijn we? Willen we misschien
nog andere dingen? Je moet je gewoon
afvragen of het wel goed is voor een
stad als Amsterdam en haar burgers
om steeds met dezelfde politici opgeza-
deld te worden. Aan de PvdA in Am-
sterdam is het nu om te kijken hoe de
continuïteit moet worden ingevuld. Er
is genoeg kennis in de partij om niet in
een zwart gat te vallen. De PvdA in
Amsterdam is nu aan het vernieuwen,
je kunt je alleen afvragen of deze ver-
nieuwing niet wat al te radicaal is.'

Genet bestrijdt dat Jonker en Wilde-
kamp geïsoleerd zijn geraakt de afgelo-

DAG IN DAG UIT

nderen en
nooit tijd

vermoed-
De goede
lichamelij-
volgd door
chte, waar
kan duiden
st, stress of
belasting.
rignis niet
vermoed-

aden tatts
de
heidheids-
ten niet te
en. Je rea-
toch ook
e licht om
eft d...
er heeft,
een arts
a moet een
het is niet
appij om te
n een week
is dat de

ndekken of
te van ver-
oorden van

ngenverlies?
t het nemen

n dan nor-

snel geïrri-
er van deze
d op te pas-

XvG

Veel scientologen in Bosnië-mars

'De sfeer klopte niet, dat voelde ik
meteen', zegt Johan de Vries. 'Voor
een Bosnië-demonstratie in Am-
sterdam ging het veel te gediscipline-
erd. We mochten alleen maar
twee-aan-twee lopen, en alle borden
waren verzorgd door de organisatie.
De teksten daarop gingen allemaal
in één richting: "Lord Owen is een
psychiater", "Dit is een psychiatri-
sche oorlog", en meer van dat.'

Al wandelend tussen zijn mede-
betogers begon De Vries afgelopen
zaterdag een onderzoekje. En spoed-
dig werd hem duidelijk wat er niet
klopte: hij liep in feite mee in een
optocht van de Scientologykerk.
Deze beweging is in het verleden
vaak in opspraak geraakt door haar
agressieve wervingsmethoden en is
in een aantal landen verboden.

'Demonstreer tegen de waanzin
in Bosnië', luidde de tekst van een
advertentie die vrijdag in de krant-
ten stond. De Vries: 'Er stond niet
bij wie de demonstratie organiseer-
de, maar omdat de situatie in Bos-
nië mij erg hoog zit ben ik er toch
maar naartoe gegaan.'

De betoging ging van het Tropen-
instituut naar de Nieuwmarkt. De
Vries heeft het eindpunt echter niet
gehaald. 'Ik ben er na een paar mi-
nuten uitgestapt', vertelt hij. 'Het
viel me op dat 80 procent van de
deelnemers een T-shirt droeg met
daarop onder meer de tekst "Vrede
voor Vrede/Broeders voor Broe-
ders/Religie voor Religie". De orga-
nisatie achter de demonstratie
bleek "Vredesbeweging voor Euro-
pa" te heten. Dat zei me niets. Maar
toen ik het vroeg aan de mensen in



Het Scientology-gebouw in Amster-
dam.

die T-shirts vertelden ze me dat ze
scientologen waren.'

Voor De Vries was dat het mo-
ment om af te haken. 'Ik voelde me
vernuukt', zegt hij.

'En de gedachte dat nu zelfs het
menselijk leed in Bosnië door deze
sekte wordt geëxploiteerd, vind ik
afschuwelijk. Er liepen ook Bosni-
sche vluchtelingen mee met de de-
monstratie. Ik vrees dat die mensen

niet weten door wie ze zich hebben
laten lijmen.'

Om helemaal zeker te zijn van
zijn zaak meldde De Vries zich later
telefonisch als *Bosnian refugee* bij
de Scientologykerk in Amsterdam.
Hij vroeg de kerk naar 'your peace
organisation' en werd daarop door-
verwezen naar de Vredesbeweging
voor Europa.

Voor de demonstratie in Amster-
dam benaderde de Vredesbeweging
voor Europa ook het IKV in Den
Haag, dat aanvankelijk niet onge-
negen was om officieel een spreker
te leveren. 'We hebben daar echter
van afgezien na enige gesprekken
met mensen van die organisatie',
zegt een woordvoester van het
IKV. 'Ze zeiden dat hun beweging
was voortgekomen uit mensenrechten-
en kunstenaarskringen, maar
veel bleef onduidelijk. Later kregen
we steeds meer aanwijzingen dat de
organisatie nauwe banden heeft
met de Scientologykerk.'

Namens de Vredesbeweging voor
Europa zegt Andrik Schaper: 'De
beweging is mede opgericht door
scientologen, inderdaad. Maar er
zijn ook moslims, protestanten en
katholieken lid van. En mogen
scientologen niet opkomen voor
Bosnië? Onze beweging doet goed
werk voor honderdduizenden die in
nood verkeren. Wie zijn de mensen
die kritiek hebben op onze demon-
stratie in Amsterdam? Wanneer u
alleen maar opschrijft wat zij zeg-
gen, schrijft u leugens.'

De vraag waarom de Vredesbe-
weging voor Europa bij het organi-
seren van een demonstratie niet
openlijk uitkomt voor haar banden
met de Scientologykerk, gaat hij
echter uit de weg.

Pierre Heijboer

Vijftien piek voor een groene droom

Het hooibed wordt eens per
verschoond. Verder behoeft
hooihotel weinig onderhoud. I
Duitse Neder-Saksen is in
jaren een keten van hooihotels
staan: boerderijen die hun z
openstellen voor toeristen m
hoeft aan een groene droom.
Echt knus hoeft de hooi-
niet te zijn. In het Nedersaks
dorp Merzen is bij de familie
ne plaats voor vijftig hooislape
rapporteert het agrarisch we
De Boerderij. De familie hee
melkveebedrijf en zeven vak-
huisjes in exploitatie.

Het inrichten van een con-
hooihotel kostte de familie F
ruim twintigduizend gulden
merendeel bestemd voor de
van sanitaire voorzieningen. V
is er weinig zorg nodig, legt
Elisabeth Frohne uit. Elke
neemt zijn slaapzak mee, he
wordt één keer per jaar verv

Vier jaar geleden lanceerde
Boggasch van de Neder-Sak
arbeidsgemeenschap 'Vakan-
vrijheid op het land' het ide
het hooihotel. Wandelaars e
sers kunnen voor ongeveer
gulden in het hooi overna
Een 'boerenontbijt' is bij d
inbegrepen.

Nederlandse instanties re-
lauw op het idee. De VVV A
hoek vermoedt dat in Ned
weinig vraag zal zijn naar h
tels. De Stichting Vrije Rec
gespecialiseerd in kampeerb
rijen, vindt het maar een
vaarlijk en 'vies' gedoe. Zij v
ver stapelbedden op de deel

Volkswaakt 31/8/95

De Galactische eindstrijd

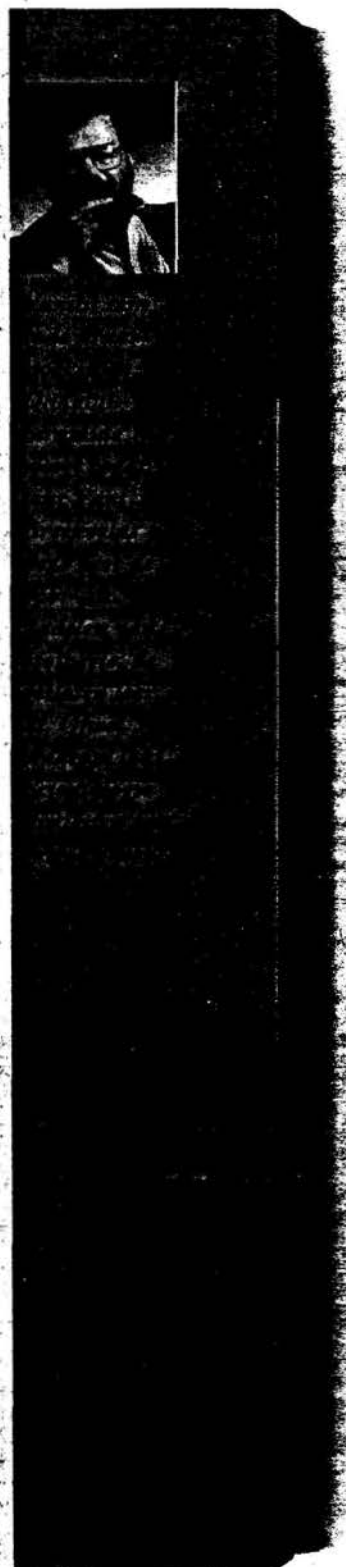
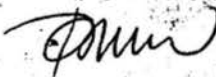
Het artikel op blz 50-65 was nog niet verschenen - nee, logisch, want ik zat nog aan dit nummer te werken. Toch hadden we al een dikke map met brieven, als reactie erop. Die brieven zijn negatief. Het is een schande, zeggen ze. Het artikel is beneden het peil van ONKRUID. Men verzoekt dan ook vriendelijk, soms zelfs onvriendelijk, niet tot publicatie over te gaan, Hoogachtend, mensen van de Scientology. Aan wie wij voorinzage van een artikel over hun beweging hebben verschaft.

Het wrijfpunt zit 'm in de geheime leer van de Scientology. Die is zó geheim dat de Nederlandse leden van dit kerkgenootschap hem zelf nog niet kennen. 'n Geheim maakt iemand kwetsbaar. Geeft ruimte aan twijfel, speculatie en fantasie. Iedereen kan hardop zeggen wat jouw geheim wel is - alleen jij niet. Het is niet waar wat ze zeggen, roep je stampvoetend. Maar wat het dan wel is - dat zeg ik niet. Je kunt dat alleen maken als je een groot moreel gezag hebt. En dat is nu wat Scientology ontbeert. Dus publiceert ONKRUID de geheime doelstellingen van Scientology: Scientology is een soort Satanisme in science fiction-vorm en keert zich tegen christus. In de galactische strijd van prins Xenu tegen de wederkomst van christus is het de bedoeling dat Xenu wint.

Onzin? Het kan zijn. Jammer dat *geen enkele aanhanger* van Scientology in Nederland kan vertellen, hoe het dan wel zit.

Ik denk niet dat het artikel 'ver onder de maat van ONKRUID' is, zoals Scientologen schreven. We hebben bewust afgezien van het bekende verhaal over de geldklopperij van Scientology. We hebben geen aandacht besteed aan de verhalen omtrent het sectarisch gehalte van deze vereniging: de last die je zou hebben om er weer af te komen, wanneer je niet langer mee wilt doen, de druk die er op je zou worden uitgeoefend. Nee, het gaat ons om de vraag of Scientology op spiritueel terrein iets te bieden heeft. Jammer dat het dan uiteindelijk moet uitdraaien op welles/nietes.

Ik meen dat de tijd van het verborgene, het esoterische, voorbij is. Dat het sterke punt van onze eeuw de openbaring aan iedereen is. Niet dat dáár niet een paar bezwaren aan kleven, - maar je weet dan tenminste wat prins Xenu van plan is.



Amstel Kliniek

Medische praktijk voor biologische geneeskunde (t.o. het AMC/Amsterdam)



- CHELATIETHERAPIE EFFECTIEF BIJ VAATVERNAUWING: hartkrampen (angina pectoris) rokens- (et alage)benen (claudicatio) vernauwing van de hersenvaten

Tevens effectieve behandeling van:

- CHRONISCHE VERMOEDHEID, M.E.
- ALLERGISCHE EN REUMATISCHE ZIEKTEN
- CHRONISCHE INFECTIES, VERMINDERDE AFWEER
- OVERGEWICHT, CHECK-UPS, REVITALISATIE

Lydia Boeken, arts
Paul van Meerendonk, arts

Bel voor informatie tel. 020-69 15 140

DE JEUGD VAN JEZUS



De jeugd van Jezus

DE JEUGD VAN JEZUS verschijnt omstreeks begin december bij Uitgeverij De Ster. 400 pag., gebonden. Prijs f 39,50. U kunt nu reeds bestellen bij de boekhandel of bij de

JAKOB LORBER STICHTING VOOR HET NEDERLANDSE TAALGEBIED
Burg. De Millylaan 1, 7231 DP Warnsveld Tel. 05750-21803
Daar is ook een catalogus van alle Lorberboeken gratis verkrijgbaar.

het stroompje en slaat er een naald op het apparaat uit. Dat is dan aanleiding om dieper in het onderwerp te duiken, nadere vragen te stellen om te achterhalen wat de oorzaak van de gewekte spanning eigenlijk is.

De E-meter is wel vergeleken met een 'leugendetector', maar al zulke apparaten meten alleen maar of er (verhoogde) spanning in de persoon wordt gewekt. De functie van het auditeren is wel te vergelijken met die van de klassieke katholieke biecht: alles verwoorden wat je dwars zit, wat op jou of je geweten drukt (een verschil is wel dat de scientologen er een dossier van aanleggen). Via iets recents komt je op emotionerende dingen van vroeger terecht, en zo kan er steeds verder terug worden gegaan. Het lijkt ook wel op regressie-therapie, maar volgens de scientologen wordt er geen gebruik gemaakt van hypnose. Het gaat er volgens hen om, alles heel bewust overzichtelijk te maken voor het analytische verstand. Zo wordt de onbewuste invloed van het reactieve verstand steeds meer uitgeschakeld. Daarmee zou je ook worden bevrijd van allerlei psychosomatische aandoeningen die hun oorzaak vinden in het onbewuste. Er kunnen jaren van auditeren overheen gaan, maar als je uiteindelijk 'clear' bent, dan zou je voor 100% rationeel denken, vrij zijn van gebreken en een hoog IQ hebben.



Patrick Peperstraete, hoofd Externe Zaken van de Scientologykerk Amsterdam:

"Vóór ik met Scientology in aanraking kwam was ik er niet best aan toe. Ik gebruikte softdrugs (hasj) en alcohol en met mijn relaties ging het ook al slecht. Ik leefde niet meer in de tegenwoordige tijd, ik was nooit met m'n aandacht bij wat ik deed. En ik kon me ook niet meer herinneren wat er drie jaar geleden gebeurd was. Alles was vaag. Eigenlijk wandelde ik per ongeluk Scientology binnen, maar dat was het begin van de oplossing. Door het geauditeerd worden en door de oefeningen in Scientology kwam ik weer terug in de dagelijkse werkelijkheid."

Je bent 'n onsterfelijk geestelijk wezen: een 'thetan'

Het duurde inderdaad een poos voordat er 'clears' waren en met de door Hubbard opgezette organisaties rond Dianetics verliep het ook al niet voorspoedig. Binnen een paar jaar na de introductie van Dianetics kwam hij met een nieuw concept: Scientology. Dat woord bestond volgens sommige bronnen eigenlijk al en betekende zoveel als 'deskundologie', maar dat zal Hubbard toen niet geweten hebben. Wat hem betrof was Scientology 'de studie van het weten'; ook sprak hij van een 'religieuze filosofie'. Volgens woordvoerders van de Scientology-Kerk Amsterdam was de reden om Scientology te introduceren, dat Dianetics al snel voorbij de grenzen van wetenschap ging omdat men herinneringen uit de tijd in de baarmoeder kreeg, en zelfs van daarvóór. In Scientology wordt voortgebouwd op Dianetics; niet alleen kwamen er allerlei cursussen bij, Hubbard presenteerde daarnaast steeds meer mogelijkhe-



den om in vorige levens te duiken en ook de last daarvan te lozen. Cursuswerk en auditeren vormen met elkaar een hele 'brug' naar niets minder dan het besef dat je een onsterfelijk geestelijk wezen bent - in scientologytaal: een 'thetan'. Onderweg zou de aan zichzelf werkende scientoloog stapsgewijs een aantal tussenliggende niveaus van bewustzijn kunnen bereiken.

Hoewel Dianetics als het ware in Scientology werd ingebed, gaat niet iedereen die met het één begint in het andere door. Merijn Gijzen uit Amsterdam (een pseudoniem omdat ze door haar omgeving niet met haar

Julia Rijnvis, PR-stafid van de Scientologykerk Amsterdam:

"Ik had destijds een probleem op mijn werk, en mijn vriend (inmiddels mijn man) had toen al cursussen bij Scientology gedaan. Zo kwam ik op het idee om de gratis persoonlijkheidstest te doen, die Scientology aan beginners aanbiedt. Dat was een goede momentopname van hoe ik toen in het leven stond. Er werd me een cursus aangeboden om nader in te gaan op dat wat ik in mijn leven niet onder controle had. Ik was meteen enthousiast over de cursussen... Het werd me duidelijk in wat voor situatie ik me bevond, en ik was enthousiast over die cursussen en ben toen nog meer cursussen gaan volgen."

Scientology-verleden wil worden geïdentificeerd) zag er vanaf, hoewel ze aanvankelijk wel enthousiast was. "Ik meende door het auditeren inderdaad een betere gezondheid te kunnen krijgen," vertelt ze. "en in dat opzicht heb ik er ook wel wat aan gehad." Verschillende termen uit het opmerkelijke jargon van Scientology spreken haar nog steeds wel aan. Zoals *restimulatie*, het opnieuw opwekken van oude emoties en psychosomatische klachten door gebeurtenissen in het heden. En *SP* oftewel *suppressive person*: iemand in je omgeving die jouw ontwikkeling dwarsboomt, zodat je een conflict met die ander en/of met jezelf krijgt en daardoor een *PTS* wordt: een *potential trouble source* (een bron van potentiële moeilijkheden, voor je omgeving, voor Scientology...).

Vrijheid van de eindeloze cyclus van geboorte en dood

Het is even wennen, al die termen. Een Scientology-brochure verduidelijkt waar het naar toe zou moeten: "Op de hogere niveaus van Scientology-auditing boven Clear, verkrijgt men volledige geestelijke vrijheid van de eindeloze cyclus van geboorte en dood, een staat van volkomen bewustzijn, herinnering en vermogen als een geest, onafhankelijk van het lichaam." Dat is de staat van *operating thetan*, een geestelijke entiteit die vrij is van al die narigheden en buiten z'n fysieke lichaam om kan opereren (handelen). "Scientology is een heel exact geloof," verzekert dezelfde brochure. "Een fundamentele leerstelling is dat men geestelijke vrijheid slechts bereiken kan als de weg zoals die in de geschriften is uiteengezet, gevolgd wordt zonder er vanaf te wijken."

Al die geschriften komen van L. Ron Hubbard, de stichter. Er is veel over gebakkeleid of Scientology nu een

religie c.q. religieuze beweging, dan wel een commercieel bedrijf in vermomming is. Dat leidde in diverse landen tot juridische steekspelen, en bijvoorbeeld pas in 1993 heeft de Amerikaanse belastingdienst Scientology erkend als religie. Hoe dan ook, er is nog nooit aangetoond dat Hubbard zelf of andere personen zich door middel van Scientologykerken hebben verrijkt. In een onderzoek voor de Tweede Kamer werd jaren geleden de conclusie getrokken dat Scientology wel gericht moet zijn op wat de Kerk zelf zegt: 'de verbreiding van de eigen ideologie'. Inmiddels is er een wereldwijde hiërarchie van meer dan 1100 kerken, missies en Scientology-groepen. Onder uiteenlopende namen, en met aanverwante (voor een deel ook commerciële) organisaties die niet onder de kerkelijke hiërarchie vallen.

Hubbard zelf beweerde dat Scientology als religie een uitbreiding is - een 'rechtstreekse voortzetting' zelfs - van het werk van Boeddha, die zich ook al richtte op de verlossing uit het rad van wedergeboorte. Volgens Hubbard kwam Boeddha erachter "hoe de ziel buiten het lichaam te laten treden. De moelijkheid die hij met zijn werk had, was hoe dit stabiel te doen of iemand in deze uitgetreden toestand te houden." Inmiddels is Scientology echter "helemaal geslaagd in het bewerkstelligen van het eigen bewustzijn van het individu van zijn geestelijke aard en mogelijkheden."

Zou Boeddha wel zo blij zijn met Hubbards visie op zijn werk? Dat valt te betwijfelen, ook al omdat Hubbard ontkent dat er zoiets als *nirwana* bestaat. Hij gelooft ook niet dat alle levende wezens uit dezelfde Bron voortkomen, en eenzijn of eenwording met het universum vindt hij eveneens onzin: "Thetans zijn individuen" en dat blijven ze volgens hem ook. Op hun best zijn ze individuen zonder lichaam, en als ze dan toch een lichaam hebben, dan moeten ze daar niet in vast zitten.

Een heel stelsel van training en oefening zou de scientoloog niet alleen leiden tot betere communicatie en prettiger functioneren in het dagelijks leven, maar uiteindelijk tot een bewustzijnsstaat waarin men moeiteloos kan uit-treden en weer terug kan komen in het eigen lichaam.

"Ik merkte hoe zij tussen mij en de camera in danste"

Is dat wel zo begeerlijk en gezond, uit-treden? Het schijnt soms al vroeg voor te komen, maar de één moet er



Marie-José Vos, scientologe en 'field staff member':

"Mr Witteveen, die in 1984 voor de Tweede Kamer dat rapport over religieuze bewegingen heeft geschreven, heeft zo'n anderhalf jaar geleden tegen een scientoloog gezegd dat hij nadien positiever over Scientology is gaan denken."

(Mr T.A.M. Witteveen: "Ik weet niet waar men dat op baseert. Het komt me tamelijk gratuit voor. Maar nu u 't me zo vraagt: ik heb de indruk dat er wel wat veranderd is, niet zozeer vanwege mijn aanbevelingen maar omdat er internationaal ook het een en ander in Scientology lijkt veranderd.")

DENK OOK EENS AAN JEZELF

Ga er eens een dagje tussenuit. Kom naar de leukste manifestatie voor gezondheid en milieu: VIVA NATURA. Een vrolijke, optimistische en informatieve dag vol activiteiten en entertainment. Geniet van gezond eten en drinken. Doe ideeën op voor gezond en milieubewust wonen, werken en tuinieren. Maak kennis met de nieuwste ontwikkelingen op het gebied van lichamelijke en geestelijke gezondheid. Doe mee, experimenteer, kijk je ogen uit en geniet van een gezond dagje uit. Voor jezelf.



Openingstijden:

Donderdag 20 en vrijdag 21 april van 10.00 tot 22.00 uur
Zaterdag 22 en zondag 23 april van 10.00 tot 18.00 uur

Inlichtingen:

Koninklijke Nederlandse Jaarbeurs.
Telefoon: 030 - 955 560

Met de trein naar VIVA NATURA?

Voor informatie over Rail Idee
bel 06 - 9292 (50 ct/m)



JAARBEURS
UTRECHT/HOLLAND
20 T/M 23 APRIL '95

REDUCTIEBON - REDUCTIEBON - REDUCTIEBON

REDUCTIEBON
VOOR MAX. 2 PERSONEN

Bij inlevering van deze reductiebbon betaalt u per persoon f 12,50 entree i.p.v. f 15,-. Deze reductie geldt niet in combinatie met andere kortingsregelingen.

DE LEUKSTE MANIFESTATIE VOOR
GEZONDHEID EN MILIEU

Naam: _____
Adres: _____
Postcode: _____
Plaats: _____

REDUCTIEBON - REDUCTIEBON - REDUCTIEBON - REDU

een langere weg voor afleggen dan de ander. Aan de staat van *operating thetan* (OT) gaan zeven stappen op de 'brug' vooraf, en de inhoud van de stappen die iemand nog niet heeft genomen, wordt vertrouwelijk gehouden. Julia Rijnvis, PR-medewerkster van de Scientologykerk in Amsterdam: "Wat wij gehoord hebben, is dat het een fijne staat van zijn is, om dat te kunnen en onder controle te hebben. Wat het precies inhoudt zullen we zelf moeten ervaren."

Ex-scientoloog Jan Houwert heeft een tijdje geloofd dat een OT zijn lichaam bijvoorbeeld in Nederland zou kunnen laten om in New York de krant te gaan lezen. Merijn Gijzen noemt als voorbeeld het verhaal van een OT die in Nederland aankwam en merkte dat ze haar koffer op het vertrekpunt in Kopenhagen had laten staan. Anderen verbaasden zich: zo'n fout kon een OT toch niet maken? De verklaring die de vrouw had gegeven, was "dat haar lichaam al in Nederland was terwijl ze zelf nog in Denemarken was."

Een OT kan, volgens de Scientologyboeken, van alles doen zonder zijn lichaam erbij te gebruiken. Zoals het 'projecteren van een intentie op afstand' (ergens anders iets laten gebeuren). En zo zou een OT ook in staat zijn tot 'het beïnvloeden van het universum van anderen'. Marie-José Vos uit Huizen, Scientologymedewerkster in het veld, kent er voorbeelden van. Ze was er eens bij toen een paar scientologen op een schip zaten en een schoorsteen heel vieze rook zagen uitspuwen. "Zullen we die rook eens laten ophouden?" had iemand geopperd. Prompt hield de uitstoot van rook op. Toeval of niet? Ze moesten in elk geval lachen... Marie-José nam ook eens deel aan een uitzending van Avro's Televisier, waarin ze zich moest verweren tegen kritiek op Scientology. Op een gegeven moment merkte ze dat een medescientologe uit Heemstede, die op dat moment gewoon thuis naar de TV zat te kijken, "tussen mij en de camera in danste, om mij niet te zeer gedeprimeerd te laten worden door die smerige onzin die er werd gezegd door verslaggevers."

Wie eenmaal OT is, kent geen negativiteit

Of zulke invloeden van scientologen nu wel of niet reëel zijn, Marie-José Vos ziet er geen gevaar in. "De miserie van Scientology ligt in de sfeer van het inherent goede... de beïnvloeding van anderen wordt niet gedaan vanuit een negatief gezichtspunt." Voordat iemand zich heeft ontwikkeld tot op het niveau van OT, zegt ze, is er bij hem of haar al zoveel *weggeauditeerd* dat er geen sprake meer kan zijn van slechte bedoelingen, die altijd voortkomen uit het reactieve verstand.

Scientologen zijn er, in navolging van Hubbard, van

overtuigd dat de mens in wezen goed is. Julia Rijnvis, PR-medewerkster van de Scientologykerk Amsterdam, wijst er bovendien op dat je in Scientology niet verder komt zonder die diepgaande te zuiveren. "Als je je niet ethisch gedraagt, kom je niet verder. Alleen iemand die zich werkelijk ethisch verantwoord gedraagt, kan die OT-niveaus bereiken. Kijk, wat er gebeurt is dat je steeds meer jezelf wordt. Je krijgt steeds meer controle en beheersing over jezelf en datgene wat je zelf wilt doen, en ook over je reacties op anderen

Jon Atack, ex-scientoloog en schrijver van het 'General report on Scientology' en 'De valkull van de totale vrijheid'

"De Sea Org (een soort elitegroep binnen Scientology, jarenlang met oprichter Hubbard gehuisvest op een aantal schepen, red.) is een paramilitaire organisatie, waarin de leden pseudo-marine-uniforms dragen en pseudo-marinerangen hebben."

"Alle Sea Org-leden worden verondersteld training te krijgen in gevechtstechnieken en wapenbehandeling."

(Julia Rijnvis, PR-medewerkster Scientology Amsterdam)

"Absurd! Sea Org is op zee begonnen en een scheepsbemannings draagt gewoonlijk een uniform. Toen ze aan land gingen bleef het uniform, dat is alles."

in de zin van dat je jouw punt kunt maken. Dus je moet dat woord 'controle' niet negatief zien, zoals vaak gebeurt.

Ook Patrick Peperstraete, hoofd-externe zaken, meent dat gevorderde scientologen geen kwaad kunnen met het beïnvloeden van 'het universum van anderen': "In Scientology gaat het om positieve invloed, je moet het niet van de negatieve kant bekijken. Als je, als auditor, een ander werkelijk begrijpt, zijn problemen kunt zien zoals de ander het ook ziet, dan kun je die ander ook helpen. Daar gaat het om bij die beïnvloeding."

Marie-José Vos: "OT-verschijnselen en paranormale gaven gaan in bijna 100% van de gevallen samen met een positief gebruik van energie. OT worden heeft alles te maken met verantwoordelijkheid. Je krijgt je gaven als thetan niet terug wanneer je die negatief wilt aanwenden." Maar er bestaat toch ook zoiets als zwarte magie? Dat wel, geeft ze toe, maar als daar sprake van is, dan is iemand nog in de greep van z'n reactieve

verstand. Een echte OT - vanaf OT-niveau 8 - is daaraan voorbij. Maar zou er dan niet een marge zijn waarin gerommeld kan worden door iemand die al wel wát ontwikkeld heeft maar nog niet zuiver op de graat is? "Ja, waarschijnlijk kan Jan Houwert nu meer ellende voor Scientology veroorzaken dan voordat hij OT-6 was... maar dat zijn de randverschijnselen."

t is een spelletje, iedereen houdt elkaar voor de gek

Jan Houwert is zich intussen van geen enkel magisch vermogen bewust. Als (ex-)OT-6 kent hij een deel van de 'brug' maar veel heeft dat hem niet opgeleverd.

"Het is eigenlijk een spelletje," zegt hij. "Je weet dat je eigenlijk hetzelfde bent als je was, maar dat zeg je niet

tegen de anderen. Omdat je denkt dat je de enige bent. In Scientology kringen mag je niet praten over wat je hebt meegemaakt tijdens auditing enzovoort; dus wat je wel of niet hebt bereikt, kun je niet vergelijken met een ander. Maar als je praat met andere OT's die eruit zijn gegaan, dan blijkt dat ze precies dezelfde twijfels en gevoelens van mislukking hadden als ik. Er worden dingen beloofd die ze niet bereikt hebben, maar je kunt heel lang blijven denken dat je de enige bent. 't is een spelletje, iedereen houdt elkaar voor de gek."

Houwert is er zo'n vijf jaar in blijven geloven, maar "na twee tot drie jaar was het al niet meer 100 procent. Eerst is het idee dan: Scientology is perfect, wat de mensen ervan maken, dat is wat anders. Een poosje later denk je: als de mensen zo doen, is Scientology misschien toch niet perfect. Maar er zitten goeie dingen in. Weer later denk je: er is toch niet zoveel goeds maar Hubbard is toch heel bijzonder. En als je dan Hubbard bestudeert, ontdek je dat hij goed over zichzelf kon vertellen en Science Fiction schreef, maar verder niet zo bijzonder is."

Een deel van Hubbards omvangrijke oeuvre bestaat uit SF-boeken, een genre waarin hij zich al bekwaamde voordat hij met Scientology begon. Wie zich beperkt tot zijn 'religieuze' geschriften, krijgt gemakkelijk de indruk dat hij beide soorten literatuur niet helemaal uit elkaar heeft kunnen houden. Merijn Gijzen ziet Hubbard zelfs als "een kruising tussen een fantastische idealist en een idealistische fantaseer. Een hoop van zijn Scientologyboeken horen thuis in SF of fantasy." In Scientology kringen hoorde ze dat het met hun methodologie mogelijk was dat je je bril niet meer nodig zou hebben, dat kaalheid kon verdwijnen, iemand nieuwe kiezen had laten groeien op de plek van verrotte, en dat vrouwen hun borsten groter konden laten worden. "Belachelijk," zegt Julia Rijnvis. "Totale onzin," beaamt Patrick Peperstraete. "Ik ben ervan overtuigd dat ik door de dingen die ik bij Scientology heb gedaan, een pijn in m'n ene been ben kwijt geraakt. Die andere mogelijkheden vind ik heel boeiend, maar zouden wel sterk overdreven kunnen zijn," vindt Merijn Gijzen.

Galactische Confederatie, onder de heerschappij van de kwade prins Xenu

In een voordracht heeft Hubbard ooit gezegd dat SF-schrijvers niet uit hun fantasie putten maar uit hun herin-

Jan Houwert, ex-scientoloog, oprichter van de voormalige stichting 'Terug naar af'

"In de jaren '50 en '60 werd Scientology geboren, in de jaren '70 werd het een echte strijd om een plaats te verwerven en mensen onder controle te krijgen, met gebruikmaking van geweld tegen vijanden van Scientology. In de jaren '80 werd Scientology teruggepakt door rechtbanken, de wet en de publieke opinie. En nu, in de jaren '90, is Scientology bezig om respectabel te worden. Ze zijn nu voorzigtiger - vroeger kwamen ze openlijk met bedreigingen, nu word je niet meer bedreigd."

NEW AGE



Winkels

Boeken (ook import uit USA en UK), new age muziek, video's, kunstkaarten, tarotkaarten, posters, piramides, sieraden, aromalampjes, ionisators, bachremedies, massageoliën, kristallen ballen, wierook, edelstenen (en remedies), etherische oliën, spellen, ayurvedische medicijnen, pendels, grote collectie tibetaanse schalen & cymbalen, boeddha-beelden, etc.

Theehuis

Heerlijke broodjes en tosti's (vegetarische, biologische ingrediënten), chai, bamboe, cappuccino, etc.

Galerie

Wisselende exposities van kunstenaars met spirituele/esoterische achtergrond

Welkom

*Homen Flowerplex met Hella v.d. Bosch: Ma. en Di. 13.00-17.00 uur *Meditatie (Hiramaose astrologie) met Sanatan: Wo. 11.00-18.00 uur *Dance met Marcel Zwart: Do. 13.30-18.00 uur *Natuurlogie met Ton v.d. Boegh: Vr. 14.00-18.00 uur *Handteken met Brigitte Hasemann: Za. 13.00-17.00 uur

Om Smit's Shop

AMSTERDAM Warmoesstraat 55 Tel. 020-6261899
Busse postbureau 2 min. van CS Ogen
ma. 13.00-18.00, di. 13.00-18.00, do. 13.00-18.00, za. 13.00-18.00

60



Spiegels van de ziel

De mooiste verhalen van Kahlil Gibran

gebonden, 448 blz., f 49,50

SERVIRE



VERKRIJGBAAR IN DE BOEKHANDEL

ONKRUID 103

nering aan vorige levens: beelden die ze nogal eens abusievelijk als fantasie beschouwen en dan beschrijven als iets wat in de toekomst (misschien) gaat plaatsvinden. Zelf vertelde hij honderd keer over wat er volgens hem allemaal is gebeurd in de loop der tijden, en waar ook nu levende mensen ooit bij betrokken waren. Wie zich wil ontwikkelen tot een echte OT, moet ook door al dit soort herinneringen heengaan en zich losmaken van de invloed ervan. De Engelse ex-scientoloog Jon Atack doet er verslag van in zijn boekje *De valkuil van de totale vrijheid*, in Nederland uitgegeven door Jan Houwerts voormalige stichting Terug naar af. Het klinkt alsof je in een aflevering van de TV-serie *Star Trek* terecht bent gekomen, of in een film als *Star Wars*:

"Bij OT-3 wordt de student verteld dat de aarde 75 miljoen jaar geleden deel uitmaakte van de Galactische Confederatie, onder de heerschappij van de kwade prins Xenu. De Confederatie werd geplaagd door een enorme overbevolking en Xenu ontwikkelde een plan waarbij de bevolking van 76 planeten naar de aarde werd verscheept en vernietigd. De geesten of thetans van deze slachtoffers werden tot ontploffing gebracht door H-bommen in vulkanen te plaatsen, en vervolgens samengebracht aan 'elektrische stroken'. In deze geesten werden gedurende 36 dagen beelden van de toekomstige gemeenschappen op aarde *geïmplanteerd* (hypnotische suggestie). Volgens Hubbard zijn sindsdien alle beschavingen en godsdiensten afkomstig van deze hypnotische implantaties.

Volgens Julia Rijnvis baseren Atack en Houwert zich "op een collectie van gestolen en vervalste documenten van de Kerk." Er zouden verschillende versies van dit Scientologymateriaal in omloop zijn, en de vervalsingen zouden volgens de PR-mensen van de Kerk in Amsterdam bedoeld zijn om de voortgezette Scientology-niveaus als 'een waanzinnig Galactic science fiction-verhaal' af te schilderen. Waanzinnig lijkt het inderdaad. Maar de PR-stafleden in Amsterdam kennen het originele verhaal niet - het gaat om een niveau waar zij nog niet aan toe zijn. Zij noch verder gevorderde scientologen kunnen of willen het oorspronkelijke materiaal laten zien, en het blijft dus de vraag of en in hoeverre er iets verdraaid is.

Oeroude, hypnotisch geïmplanteerde beelden

Volgens het materiaal dat Atack en Houwert tot hun beschikking hebben, komt Hubbards visie er dus op neer dat de mensheid zich heeft ontwikkeld op basis van beelden die in oeroude tijden langs hypnotische weg in ons zijn geïmplanteerd. De 'kwade prins Xenu' zou door de Galactische Confederatie gevangen gezet zijn, maar onder

In de Scientology-winkel in Amsterdam: Dianeticsboeken met ontplofende vulkaan...

61

die implantaties lijden we nog steeds. Daarvan zouden we ons moeten bevrijden, en volgens datzelfde document wordt ook daarvoor het auditeren gebruikt. Volgens Jan Houwert kan het ook gebeuren dat er wordt gevraagd, wat voor rol je hebt gespeeld toen je nog een machtige thetan was - bijvoorbeeld, of je wel eens een werelddeel of een hele planeet hebt laten ontploffen. Steeds geeft de wijzer op de E-meter aan, of je nog spanning voelt bij het beantwoorden van zulke vragen. En

Jan Houwert (ex-scientoloog): doórvragen helpt om te achterhalen of je nog iets achterhoudt. Op weg naar totale vrijheid moet je bereid zijn, door heel

wat heen te gaan... Tot overmaat van ramp zouden de thetans na die implantatie zijn samengebond in clusters. Volgens Atack onthult het studiemateriaal bij stap OT-3 dat ieder levend persoon eigenlijk een verzameling van thetans is. Wil je werkelijk een vrije operating thetan zijn, dan moet er maar één, jijzelf, overblijven.

Van de andere - de *bodythetans* die als het ware aan jou en je lichaam vastkleven - moet je je zien te bevrijden. Daarmee houden de OT-niveaus 3 tot en met 7 zich bezig. Op niveau OT-8 zou je dan eindelijk simpelweg jezelf worden,

autonoom, vrij van alle illusies. En vanuit die vrijheid zou je je nog verder kunnen ontwikkelen.

De uiteindelijke staat van zijn waar de 'brug' van Scientology je naartoe zou leiden, is die van "een persoon die zijn

eigen universum kan creëren," schrijft Hubbard in zijn boek *Scientology 8-8008*, "of die, terwijl hij leeft in het universum van materie, energie, ruimte en tijd, naar willekeur illusies kan creëren die anderen kunnen waarnemen; een persoon die objecten in dat universum kan hanteren zonder mechanische middelen; en die geen behoefte heeft of voelt aan lichamen om zichzelf en zijn vrienden geïnteresseerd te houden in het bestaan."

Een contract voor de rest van haar leven(s)

Het heeft veel van wel vaker gekoesterde machtsdromen. Wat het in de praktijk gaat betekenen, zal de toekomst moeten uitwijzen (althans, voor wie het niet meteen als onzin van de hand wijst). De verst gevorderde scientologen van dit moment bevinden zich op het niveau van OT-8 en dat is nog lang niet het laatste wat Hubbard

in petto had. Sinds zijn dood worden nog geschriften van hem bewaard tot de tijd rijp is voor publicatie. Harrie van der Heijden, OT-8 en naar zijn zeggen 'in de Benelux de meest technisch onderlegde auditor', zegt heel bescheiden: "OT-8 is nog maar het eerste echte OT-level; we zijn dus eigenlijk als OT nog maar baby's." Hij maakt ook geen gebruik van de paranormale vermogens die aan OT's worden toegeschreven, al ziet hij wel een beetje uitstraling om mensen heen en heeft hij eens ervaren dat zijn schoonmoeder zich eenvoudig door de aanwezigheid van hem en zijn vrouw van 'een zeer ernstige ziekte' herstelde. Verder maakt hij de indruk van een hulpverlener die op een heel gewone, intellectuele manier mensen bijstaat in zijn Personal Improvement Center achter Wuuwwezel. Met gebruikmaking van Scientology-technieken.

"Het verstandelijk denkende 'ik' wordt in Scientology gelijk gesteld aan het geestelijke wezen, de thetan," zegt Merijn Gijzen. "Ik bleef maar vragen: wat is het 'ik', wat is jullie definitie daarvan? Maar een ander antwoord hadden ze daar niet op. En Hubbard zelf schrijft

ook: als iemand rationeel reageert, dan is het de thetan die reageert. Dus hun weg naar gezondheid, geluk en succes is een ik-aangelegenheid. De verworvenheden die Scientology je zou brengen, zouden weliswaar verder gaan dan die van je huidige 'ik' maar hadden intussen alles van het beoefenen van magie. Hun motto komt neer op: 'niet Uw, maar mijn wil geschiede'. Mij dunkt dat de chaos dan alleen nog maar groter zal worden, ondanks hun ideaal dat de hele wereld 'clear' wordt. Stel je toch voor dat al die verschillende 'operating thetans' naar hun eigen inzichten en voorkeuren van alles en nog wat zouden kunnen laten gebeuren! Als je tegen scientologen zegt dat er ook overgave nodig is, dan krijg je te horen dat je last hebt van een Christus-implant. ("Dat is een belediging," zegt Patrick Peperstraete, "als iemand dat al gezegd heeft, is het toch niet het standpunt van de Kerk.") Toen Merijn zich ook nog eens onder druk gezet voelde om verder te gaan met cursussen en er zelfs een contract klaar lag om zich voor de rest van haar leven(s) aan één van de Scientology-organisaties te verbinden, gaf ze er de brui aan.

Wie wel met Scientology doorgaat, krijgt volgens Jan Houwert pas op niveau OT-8 te lezen hoe de vork in de steel zit. Naar zijn zeggen kreeg hij het studiemateriaal bij deze fase toegestuurd door Marjorie Wakefield, een ex-

Patrick Peperstraete, hoofd Externe Zaken Scientology Amsterdam:

"Er zijn in het verleden inderdaad fouten gemaakt door bepaalde auditors - dat staat ook in het Tweede Kamer rapport over religieuze bewegingen uit 1984, en dat geef ik oprecht toe. Wij zijn daar nu heel streng in. Als een auditor de fout begaat, het een en ander te vertellen over de gegevens van iemand die hij auditeert, dan is hij eruit. Dan is het afgelopen met zijn auditor-zijn. Er zijn er dan ook de Kerk uitgezet."



LIEVER LEREN LEVEN

is een centrum, waar je jezelf via een gestructureerd, efficiënt programma kunt bevrijden van de negatieve invloed van je verleden op je huidige functionaliteit. Tegelijkertijd leer je voortaan in liefde te leven met iedereen, jezelf en alles om je heen. (De werkelijke oorzaak van alle problemen is gebrek aan liefde). In de ruim achttien jaar van het bestaan van Liever Leren Leven zijn honderden mensen geholpen met een steeds groeiende methode, die aantoonbaar blijvend resultaat oplevert. Gedurende tien achtereenvolgende werkdagen wordt intern met groepjes van maximaal drie personen tegelijk of individueel gewerkt. Gespreide en kontante betaling is mogelijk.

Frederik Vermooten
Hoofdstraat 9
9533 PJ DROUWEN
05999-64791

BOCAM-THERAPEUT



BOCAM

Bel de Beroepsvereniging!
01650-69124

Beweging
Ontspanning
Concentratie
Ademhaling
Manuele
therapie

De Werkbeurs

De uitgave van een naslagwerk

met daarin opgenomen alle:

- ondernemingen
- bedrijven
- instellingen
- instituties
- fondsen
- starters en
- particulieren

die aansluiting hebben of zoeken bij het nieuwe duurzame bedrijfseconomische en culturele vlechtwerk

wordt voorbereid

Als u in deze gids wilt worden opgenomen neem dan contact op met

De Werkbeurs
Wilhelminalaan 24
3701 BK Zeist
tel/fax (03404) 30 70 70

ORTHOtherapie

is de alom gekende aanpak volgens dr. Simon Speyer om op relatief korte tijd een definitief einde te stellen aan emotionele problemen zoals minderwaardigheidsgevoelens, geremdheid, angsten, relatieproblemen, seksuele moeilijkheden, schuldgevoelens,....

Wilt u kennismaken met deze prachtige aanpak, geef dan een seintje aan het **Orthosecretariaat**,

Hazerikstraat 20 te B 3582 Beringen
tel. 011.42 56 89 (vanuit Nederland
00.32.11.42 56 89) en we bezorgen u:

- algemene informatie over deze hulpverleningsvorm,
- de lijst van de opgeleide, actieve Orthothérapeuten,
- desgewenst informatie over de twee jaar durende opleiding.

scientologe in de Verenigde Staten. Dit (gestolen of vervalste?) document zou in 1980 door Hubbard zijn geschreven maar pas na zijn dood in 1986 ter beschikking zijn gekomen voor wie het OT-8-programma volgt.

Opnieuw wordt de verbeelding getart. De auteur onthult dat er een strijd gaande is tussen de Galactische Confederatie (ook bekend als *Lucifer of de anti-Christ*) en een bepaalde groep buitenaardse lieden die de wederkomst van Christus voorbereiden. Maar de uitvoering van dit 'scenario' kan alsnog worden verhinderd tijdens een korte periode waarin de anti-Christ heerst (een mogelijkheid die uit het bijbelboek Openbaringen zou blijken). Zo kan 'mijn missie' worden omschreven, aldus de schrijver. Want volgens hem zijn alle religies erop uit, de mensheid in slavernij te brengen. Met uitzondering van het oorspronkelijke boeddhisme - Boeddha zou zijn terugkomst als Maitreya hebben aangekondigd, en "een deel van die profetie zal bij het heengaan van L. Ron Hubbard zijn vervuld." Voor wie zich op z'n 'christelijke tenen' getrappt voelt, voegt de schrijver hier nog aan toe dat de historische Jezus lang niet zo'n heilige figuur was als wordt voorgesteld - hij zou homoseksueel zijn geweest en hebben geleden aan aanvallen van woede en haat. Verder noemt de auteur het 'een goede grap' dat de Galactische Confederatie wordt geassocieerd met het duivelse, het Beest, de Prins der Duisternis enz. De suggestie is duidelijk: het is precies andersom - *Lucifer/de anti-Christ* zou het beste met ons voor hebben, de krachten achter de naam 'Christus' zouden ons willen knechten. Een standpunt dat overeenkomt met de visie van het satanisme, waarin alles uit de christelijke leer op z'n kop wordt gezet.

Wat is de waarheid? Daarover wordt al zo lang getwist. En de strijd gaat door: de auteur van dit document kondigt aan dat hij terugkomt, niet als religieus - maar als politiek leider. Dan wil hij met indirecte hulp van de scientologen opnieuw ten strijde trekken tegen de plannen 'om van ons allemaal gelukkige slaven te maken'. "Dus hier heb je het. Het geheim dat ik al deze jaren aan mijn borst heb gedrukt. Nu ben je ook deel van dit geheim en hoef ik deze last niet langer alleen op mijn schouders te dragen..."

Merijn Gijzen vindt achteraf dat er onder de (beginnen-de) scientologen die ze leerde kennen, best wat mensen van goede wil waren. Mensen die met een zeker idealisme aan zichzelf en aan de wereld willen werken. Maar de 'hogere' niveaus van Scientology worden vertrouwelijk gehouden. Pas na jaren, na een aanzienlijke investering van tijd en geld, als ze tot over hun oren in Scientology zitten, komen ze erachter waar ze deel van zijn geworden. ●

In de
Scientology-kerk
in Amsterdam is
nog steeds een
hantoor
gereserveerd
voor de overle-
den oprichter,
L. Ron Hubbard.

Scientology en het recht van de st

Trouw 6-4-'95

door Koert van der Velde

Scientologen verkopen cursussen ethiek aan bedrijven. Onder de naam Silhouet Management Support verkopen ze de technieken die Ron L. Hubbard heeft ontwikkeld om zijn kerk te besturen – of om de volgelingen van zijn totalitaire science-fictionsekte te manipuleren, zoals critici zeggen.

In Nederland is het stil rond de sekte, in Duitsland is scientology een hot-item. Het groeit er als kool, steeds meer bedrijven omarmen er Hubbards bedrijfskunde en komen onder scientologen-leiding. Ook Silhouet in Nederland groeit. Het bedrijf is onlangs verhuisd naar een riante kantoor in Weesp. Er werken 22 mensen.

Wat is de missie van de scientologen? L. Hopstaken van Silhouet: „Wij proberen op onze manier een stuk ethisch ondernemen te bevorderen: een stukje gezonde beschaving bij te brengen waar die ontbreekt.“ Hiertoe biedt Silhouet cursussen als 'persoonlijke integriteit' en 'ethiek voor managers'. „Wij stellen vragen als: hoe ga je om met discriminatie, racisme en minderheden? Laatst hadden we hier een managementteam dat voor de helft streng christelijk was. De andere helft was niets en vloekte er af en toe stevig op los. Wij hebben de vloekers geleerd respect te hebben voor andermans mening en voor het spirituele in de mens. Als dat ontbreekt krijg je hetzelfde als in de vroegere USSR: daar stuurden ze andersdenkenden naar Siberië.“

Dat uitgerekend de scientology-sekte het bedrijfsleven ethisch handelen wil bijbrengen, klinkt vreemd voor wie zich herinnert dat scientology een reputatie heeft van manipulatie van volgelingen, terreur tegen afvalligen en treiterij van kritische journalisten. Hubbard was een hyper-creatieve science-fiction-schrijver, die zo sterk geloofde in zijn groteske fantasieën, dat hij aan paranoia ging lijden: de wereld wilde niet zien dat zijn leer de grootste stap was in de evolutie der mensheid. Hubbard bouwde een Orwelliaanse organisatie op, met een strenge hiërarchie, een eigen taaltje, uniformen, controle en medailles. In de jaren zestig kreeg scientology in verschillende landen problemen met de overheid. In Australië werd het verboden. Hubbard is al jaren dood, maar binnen de sekte is kritiek op hem nog steeds

onmogelijk. Wel lijkt het erop dat scientologen zich tegenwoordig beschaafder gedragen. Silhouet doet niet geheimzinnig over de herkomst van zijn produkt. Er hangt een portret van Hubbard in de hal en de cursussen zijn voor 95 procent gebaseerd op zijn leer, vertelt J. Ramirez van Silhouet. „Maar Silhouet staat geheel los van de scientology-kerk. Silhouet verkoopt managementtrainingen waaruit het religieuze is verwijderd.“

Zowel de scientology-kerk als Silhouet zijn echter handelsnamen van de 'RTC-kerk', het *Religious Technology Centre*, misschien wel het belangrijkste financiële en machtscentrum van de multinational. De kerk in Amsterdam verkoopt ook managementcursussen voor intern gebruik. Is het kerkelijke materiaal hetzelfde als dat van Silhouet? Neen, zegt Ramirez; ja, zegt J. Rijnvis van de kerk, die naar aanleiding van het interview met Hopstaken en Ramirez van Silhouet uit eigen beweging contact zocht met *Trouw*. Zowel de kerk als Silhouet dragen een tiende van de omzet af aan WISE, het *World Institute of Scientology Enterprises*, een onderdeel van RTC. Dat geld gebruikt scientology om de claim 'de snelst groeiende religie ter wereld' te zijn waar te maken.

Zuiveren

Wat is de werkelijke missie? „Julie hebben in de loop der jaren ongetwijfeld stukjes informatie opgevangen die verwezen naar een grotere, nog niet bekendgemaakte missie van mij op aarde“, schreef Hubbard in een vertrouwelijke brief aan zijn gevorderde volgelingen. Ook waarnemers vangen af en toe stukjes op. „Scientologen willen de planeet zuiveren van gekte, oorlog en misdaad door Hubbards ethische technologie toe te passen op individueel en op maatschappelijk niveau“, laat de sekte geïnteresseerden weten. Op een conferentie in Lausanne in 1990 hield D. Miscavige, het hoofd van het RTC en de opvolger van Hubbard, een lezing waarin hij voor insiders toespelingen maakte op de tactiek. De Duitse journalisten L. Billerbeck en F. Nordhausen citeerden hem: „U hebt gehoord van onze inspanningen om de anti-socialen op de planeet monddood te maken. En u hebt gehoord van de expansie van scientology in de openbaarheid. Dan hebt u ook van WISE gehoord.“

Spiritualiteit is in veel bedrijven en overheidsinstellingen niet vreemd meer. Managers en werknemers kunnen terecht op een bonte markt van mogelijkheden om hun spirituele kant tot ontwikkeling te brengen. Een korte serie over de cursusmarkt van 'De Nieuwe Tijd'. Vandaag: Scientology.

De twee tactieken komen samen in de cursussen om het bedrijfsleven 'ethiek' bij te brengen. Onder ethiek verstaan scientologen iets anders dan buitenstaanders.

„Ethiek is de rationaliteit van het overleven – een noodzaak voor iedere persoon of organisatie“, schrijft de kerk. Ex-scientoloog B. Penny: „Het doel van ethiek is: *getting tech in*.“ 'Tech' staat in het scientology-jargon voor de leer van Hubbard. Ex-scientoloog N. Pott-hoff over de consequenties van tech binnen bedrijven: „Een manager die scientology toepast, erkent alleen het recht van de sterkste. De zwakkere moet afsterven.“

De klanten van Silhouet zijn afkomstig uit het midden- en kleinbedrijf, al zijn er ook enkele grote ondernemingen in de kost. T. van der Geld, directeur van meubel-toeleveringsbedrijf Veenendaal & Co, deed cursussen bij Silhouet. „Het was prima. Ik heb geleerd terug te gaan naar mezelf. Ik sta nu anders in het leven en in mijn bedrijf. En omdat we met een clubje zijn gegaan, spreken we dezelfde taal: we hebben het over 'het oorzaak blijven of het effect worden' en over de 'emotionele toonschaal'.“ Heeft hij ook les gehad in anti-racisme en vrijheid van meningsuiting? „Helemaal niet. Al hadden ze het wel over anti-sociale personen, over hoe je daarmee moet omgaan.“

Volgens Hubbard is 2,2 procent van de mensen een SP, *Suppressive Person*, anti-sociaal persoon. De twintig procent van de mensheid die door zo iemand wordt beïnvloed, is een PTS, een potentiële bron van narigheid. Anti-socialen vormen

een 'derde partij', die moet worden opgespoord en ontmaskerd en zo effectief mogelijk geneutraliseerd. Hiertoe dient de PTS/SP-cursus. Ramirez van Silhouet zegt nooit van de PTS/SP-cursus te hebben gehoord. Op een door 'een SP' geleverd exemplaar van de PTS/SP-cursus staat echter wel een stempel van Silhouet.

Ook de directeur van een scheepsbouwbedrijf in de kop van Noord-Holland komt de inhoud van PTS/SP bekend voor. „PTS/SP lijkt me een moeilijke naam voor onze management-communicatietraining. Daarin leerden we de mentaliteit van mensen te analyseren. Liederen van het anti-sociale soort moet je bij Silhouet laten screenen en op cursus sturen. Functioneren ze dan nog niet, dan schop je ze eruit. Je moet de zieke appels uit de kist gooien, zeggen ze bij Silhouet.“ De directeur is zeer tevreden met deze aanpak. Fokker, Stork, de Technische Unie, SPSS Benelux en Stuweg-uitzendbureau hebben de samenwerking met Silhouet echter gestopt zodra ze hoorden wat er achter deze naam school.

Het begint met een persoonlijkheidstest, waarmee scientologen op een agressieve manier bedrijven afstropen. W. Schut van het gelijknamige metaalbedrijf is best tevreden met Silhouet, op de opdringrigheid na. „Hun telefonische marketing vond ik wel erg pittig. De verkopers hebben de strikte opdracht je periodiek te benaderen. Ze doen alles om je een cursus te laten kopen.“ Het arbeidsbureau van Weesp werft de test-aanbieders die eerst een aantal trainingen krijgen van Silhouet. „Wij vertellen werkzoekenden er wel bij dat het om de scientology-kerk gaat“, zegt directeur E. Sasbach van het arbeidsbureau. „Zodra blijkt dat er iets niet in de haak is, zullen wij deze vacatures heroverwegen.“

Rabobank

Ook het bedrijf U-Man in Bilthoven, dat 500 klanten zegt te hebben, verkoopt Hubbards persoonlijkheidstest en draagt tien procent van de omzet af aan WISE. De test wordt gebruikt in sollicitatieprocedures. De overheidsinstanties die U-Man onder zijn cliënteel zegt te hebben, noemt het liever niet bij naam, maar het personeelsselectiebureau Verhagen in Rotterdam, mag wel worden genoemd. Ook de Rabobank in Heemstede is klant.

Psychologen vegen de vloer aan met de test, die vragen bevat als vraag 19: 'Bent u van mening dat te veel geld wordt besteed aan sociale voorzieningen?'; vraag 119: 'Zou u een tienjarig kind een lijfstraf toedienen als het weigerde u te gehoorzamen?'; en vraag 139: 'Bent u voorstander van rassenscheiding?' Veel deelnemers aan de cursussen van Silhouet gaan naar huis met Hubbards boek Dianetics. Hubbard leert daarin hoe je 'engrammen' kunt kwijtraken: oude conditioneringen, ook uit vorige levens. Wie betaalt, geheimhoudt en precies doet wat is voorgeschreven, wordt clear, en daarna OT, *Operating Thetan*, in verschillende graden.

Wat is de missie? De leer van de sekte ontvouwt zich trapsgewijs aan degenen die de waarheid van het voorgaande bevestigen. Ex-scientologen publiceerden geheim cursusmateriaal dat door Hubbard zou zijn geschreven voor hogere OT's. De OT-3 is ingewijd in de leer dat de aarde 75 miljoen jaar geleden deel uitmaakte van de Galactische Federatie, die onder heerschappij stond van de kwade prins Xenu. Xenu vermoordde met H-bommen miljarden mensen op de planeet aarde. Wij vechten nog altijd tegen de engrammen die Xenu met de bommen in ons oeroude onderbewuste heeft geïmplanteerd. De OT-8 leert dat er tegenwoordig een strijd gaande is tussen de Galactische Federatie en een groep buitenaardsen die de wederkomst van Christus voorbereiden. Hubbard aan de ingewijden: „Het klinkt fantastisch maar het is de waarheid. De anti-christ vertegenwoordigt de krachten van Lucifer, de licht-bringer, de Galactische Federatie. Mijn missie is de bijbelse belofte te vervullen van de anti-christ.” De lagere scientoloog krijgt nog mee dat Christus een respectabel iemand was, de hogere leert iets anders. Hubbard: „Degenen van jullie die ik op de christelijke tenen heb getrapt, wil ik uit de droom helpen. De historische Jezus was helemaal niet de heilige figuur die ze van hem hebben gemaakt. Hij was niet alleen een pedofiel en een homoseksueel, hij leed ook aan heftige aanvallen van haat.” Meer pittige taal vinden we in een uitgelekte test voor gevorderden: 'Heb je ooit de liefde bedreven met een lijk?' 'Heb je ooit een mens geofferd?' 'Heb je ooit een planeet radio-actief gemaakt?'



Scientology-gebouw in centrum van Amsterdam - De 'snelst groeiende religie ter wereld'.

Scientology-woordvoerder Rijnvis stelt dat geschriften als deze vals zijn en worden verspreid door mensen die de kerk in een kwaad daglicht willen stellen. Sekte-onderzoeker R. Singelenberg van de Universiteit van Utrecht is niet verbaasd over de inhoud. Volgens hem zijn de documenten echt. „Logisch dat lagere scientologen de echtheid ontkennen: die zijn best integer maar gewoon nog niet ver genoeg

ingewijd. Het taalgebruik is typisch voor Hubbard. Ex-scientologen kunnen zoets niet met zoveel afstandelijkheid schrijven.” Veel religies kennen bizarre mythen. Op het bestaan van zulke verhalen alleen kan een religie niet worden veroordeeld. Het gaat om de status en functie die ze voor de aanhangers hebben. De geheime fantasieën van Hubbard hebben status noch functie voor gewone,

FOTO WERRY CRONE, TROUW
lagere scientologen, die het bestaan ervan ontkennen omdat ze er niet van weten. Het gevaar van Scientology schuilt in het autoritaire van de organisatie: de geheime fantasieën van de top bepalen de daden van onwetenden. Die zijn tot in het Nederlandse bedrijfsleven te vinden.

Eerdere artikelen in deze reeks verschenen op 11 en 30 maart.

Afkickcentrum Zutphen in opspraak

door Jan-Kees Emmer

ZUTPHEN, zaterdag

De hoofdofficier van justitie in Zutphen, mr. F.A. Vaillant, waarschuwt in een brief aan alle hoofdofficieren van Nederland voor dubieuze praktijken van het Zutphense afkickcentrum Narconon.

Narconon heeft banden met de Scientology Kerk en zou verslaafden onder druk zetten lid te worden van dit omstreden kerkgenootschap. Verder schrijven de instellingen dat verslaafden op pad worden gestuurd om geld voor Narconon in te zamelen.

De officier baseert zich hierbij op adviezen van onder andere de Nederlandse Vereniging van instellingen voor de Verslavingszorg (Neviv) en andere instellingen uit Nederland.

Vaillant schrijft dat het arrondissement Zutphen op grond van deze advie-

zen grote aarzelingen heeft ten aanzien van het plaatsen van verslaafde gedetineerden in de kliniek.

De Neviv laat geen spaan heel van Narconon. Zo meent de Neviv dat de Scientology Kerk een traditie heeft om leden te chanteren. Verder ziet de Neviv Narconon als een middel van Scientology om erkenning te krijgen.

Narconon heeft een advocaat in de arm genomen en onderzoekt of er stappen tegen de Zutphense hoofdofficier mogelijk zijn. „Dit voelt als een mes in de rug. We weten officieel niets van deze brief en we kunnen ons dus ook niet tegen de aantijgingen verdedigen. Laten ze eerst onze methode goed onderzoeken voordat ze over ons oordelen,” meent J. Kluessien, voorzitter van het bestuur van Narconon.

Persofficier mr. A. Lunenburg van het arrondissement Zutphen zegt dat Vaillant de brief heeft geschreven omdat

Narconon nogal wat reclame maakt bij justitie en advocaten. „We vonden het nodig deze reclame in perspectief te plaatsen. Het is aan de arrondissementen zelf of ze nog gedetineerden doorverwijzen.”

„Uit de informatie die wij hebben bijgevoegd, blijkt dat de kliniek niet van onbesproken gedrag is. Het zou kunnen zijn dat verslaafden die wij doorverwijzen bij Narconon in handen vallen van Scientology. En dat willen we niet.”

Volgens eigen zeggen helpt de Narconon-kliniek jaarlijks zo'n 25 à 50 mensen van hun drugverslaving af. Kluessien, die lid is van Scientology, geeft toe dat er „vriendschappelijke betrekkingen” tussen de omstreden kerk en het centrum zijn. „Onze methode is onder meer gebaseerd op de ideeën van de stichter van de Scientology Kerk.”

13/1/95

Hoofdofficier waarschuwt voor Narconon

ZUTPHEN (ANP) – De hoofdofficier van justitie in Zutphen heeft de procureurs-generaal in het land gewaarschuwd voor de achtergrond van het drugs-afkickcentrum Narconon in Zutphen.

Dit afkickcentrum, dat volop adverteert met behaalde resultaten, is nauw verbonden met de Scientology Beweging. Hoofdofficier Vaillant meldt dat Justitie in Zutphen „uiterst terughoudend” is met het doorverwijzen van verslaafden naar dit centrum.

Het Zutphense afkickcentrum is deze week heropend na een ingrijpende opknapbeurt. Het centrum zou eigenlijk verhuizen van Zutphen naar Lochem. Dat ging niet door vanwege de stortvloed aan bezwaren van inwoners van Lochem.

De Scientology Beweging kocht destijds het pand aan de Deventerweg in Zutphen onder een andere naam. Omwonenden ontdekten echter al snel dat Narconon bij de Scientology Kerk hoorde en maakten toen heftig bezwaar tegen de verkoop aan de beweging. Na eindeloze procedures, allerlei aanvullende voorwaarden van de gemeente en bemiddeling van de toenmalige burgemeester van Zutphen, mocht de sekte het afkickcentrum toch inrichten.

Ouders van verslaafden die behandeld zijn in Narconon, hebben al verschillende malen bij de politie geklaagd dat hun kind onbedoeld in een sekte terecht is gekomen. De politie kan echter niets doen, omdat de ex-verslaafden uit vrije wil bij de Scientology Kerk blijven.

13/1/95